

advanced counsellor training school



ACTS 1



**PRACTICAL APPLICATION
OF J2F AND J2W**

Please NOTE!

Very **IMPORTANT** information!

We have decided to make this information available for the use in counselling and in order to enable healing of the very wounded.

Our agreement is however, with certain ministries who have assisted us in compiling this material, that we would only make this available in print format.

In order to help counsellors and survivors AND protect those ministries that have kindly helped us, we ask the following:

- ❖ Under **no circumstances** may this material be electronically scanned or reproduced.
- ❖ It is **NOT** allowed to be placed on any website, or made available for electronic download.
- ❖ We ask you to please honour the copyright and **not to violate** this in any way.

Amanda Buys' Spiritual Covering

This is a product of *Kanaan Ministries*, a non-profit ministry under the covering of Roly, Amanda's husband for more than 40 years.

*There is no copyright on this material. However, no part may be reproduced and/or presented for **personal** gain. All rights to this material are reserved to further the Kingdom of our Messiah Y'shua HaMashiach¹ / Jesus Christ **ONLY**.*

For further information or to place an order, please contact us at:

Tel: +27 (0) 60 825 5780
Fax: +27 (0) 86 681 9458
E-mail: kanaan@iafrica.com
Website: www.kanaanministries.org

Office hours: Monday, Wednesday, Friday, 10 AM to 1 PM

The Netherlands

Media Manager Europe
email: orders@kanaanministries.nl

Kanaan International Website

Website: www.eu.kanaanministries.org

¹ Meaning: The ANOINTED one

contents

Introduction: Kingdom spheres of authority ...	15
Chapter 1: Introduction to deliverance ministry ...	26
Chapter 2: Guideline principles ...	31
Chapter 3: Practical deliverance and ministry ...	39
Chapter 4: Practical suggestions for deliverance ministry ...	48
Chapter 5: Prenatal wounds and sin ...	54
Chapter 6: Ministry for miscarriage and abortion ...	65
Chapter 7: Deliverance ministry for children ...	69
Chapter 8: Dealing with gender identity ...	82
Chapter 9: Discerning and ministry to a slumbering spiritman ...	91
Chapter 10: Parental inversion and substitute mate ...	96
Chapter 11: The three heavens...	106

contents

Chapter 12: Captive spirits ...	117
Chapter 13: Dr. Frans Cronje presentation ...	133
Chapter 14: Understanding dead human spirits ...	201
Chapter 15: Trauma bonds to time, and healing the effects of trauma ...	220

Preface

ACTS (**A**dvanced **C**ounselor **T**raining **S**chool) is our follow-on series, after working through **Journey2Freedom** and **Journey2Wholeness** (*including* the DVD's for both series), for those who have a desire and heart for counselling, and are seeking in-depth training.

ACTS is built on the principles/teaching of J2F and J2W, so we strongly recommend you have thoroughly worked through the series — not only to deal with your own bloodline, open doors, and emotional wounds — but have become familiar enough with the material, in order to help others.

We do want to give a **CAUTION** — many people go into a counselling ministry because of struggles/issues they face in their *own* lives ... however, your counselling ministry will only be as effective and “mature” (developed) as to how much you have worked through your own issues. The anointing upon your life determines how much you have died to self and your obedience in walking in GOD'S Ways.

Granted, we are all on a journey — and the process of sanctification is that of a lifetime — and the FATHER uses our ALL our struggles/issues for His Kingdom ... however, we want to remind counsellors that this ministry is a big responsibility — working with the broken and fragile people that GOD entrusts to your care.

May you always be very aware of your TOTAL dependance upon HIM — may you realize that every person is unique and that it is more important to hear from the Father, than what it is to memorize all that is in this course.

Thank you for signing up to be a part of this army!!

Shalom!!

Kanaan Ministries

Amanda's Story

My name is Amanda Buys, and I have now been living in Cape Town for more than twenty years. I am married to Roly for more than forty years, and we have three adult children (*René* married to Herman, *Corné* married to Aimee, and *Debbi* married to Ryan) and seven grandchildren. My ministry started more than thirty years ago from my home, counselling people (for hours on end!).

I never attended any formal Bible-School training and it was amazing to have the LORD “enroll” me at His University and be trained by those He chose as instruments in His Hands specifically for me!

As the Lord developed and trained me, the ministry started to grow and I was asked to teach and train what I had learned. There are so many teachers in my life that I need to give credit to, so many that never even knew I existed, BUT GOD DID!

I started putting together notes — bits and pieces from all over — added my own experiences — and then the basic Soul Care School developed (of which J2F replaced).

Then followed a course on Inner Healing (now replaced by J2W) — again notes from all over — tapes I had listened to and books I had read.

The need to train counsellors arose, and so another course was developed: “The Practical Application of Soul Care” (of which ACTS is now replacing).

I had attended a training school by John and Paula Sandford after reading all their books. They have greatly impacted my life. It is such a blessings to see how their children are developing and growing under the double-portion anointing.

The other very anointed teacher in my life was Derek Prince — I learned so much from him and always felt safe as he broke the Word with such clarity and wisdom.

Fiona Desfontein also started me on the road of understanding so many things in my own life — where things went wrong and I sat listening to her tapes for hours.

I learned so much from Dr. Rebecca Brown and I think she is a very brave lady in doing what she did (and is still doing). It cost her tremendous persecution and much of what we know today concerning the occult is because she was prepared to pay the price of laying down her life for the sake of the Kingdom. I recommend all her books.

Selwyn Hughes (“Living with Jesus Everyday”) has also impacted my life with his very specific, unique approach to counselling.

By God’s Grace and unmerited favour, He has so developed the ministry and call on my life from starting as a house-wife/Secondary-School teacher with a BSc Degree, now being able to minister in many places in South Africa, as well as many places in Europe, USA and Hong Kong / Taiwan.

From the beginning, I have never had copyright on my notes, books, etc., as I clearly heard the Lord on this one. It comes from God anyway — He chooses the person as an instrument, but that is all we are. All giftings/revelations come from Him anyway.

I would only cover my cost and the books printed were at low-cost as possible seeing I live in South-Africa and the Rand is not very strong. I have focused on the under-privileged, the poor, the prisons, the broken. I sow many books into these areas, as well as into Africa.

Years ago, somebody approached me and offered me a website free of charge. So now anyone can download whatever they would choose — all free of charge.

With all this background, I need to make sure that I give credit where credit is due. I cannot state sentence of paragraph as to where I got what. In those many years ago, I would just write as the Lord would teach me. Never could I have imagined that this is where the ministry would stand today.

I can basically name the books on my shelf and the authors just to say a BIG THANK YOU that you were obedient to the call of God on your life, for the cost of remaining faithful to the call, for the cost of the families involved in allowing you to be used by the Lord.

May God richly reward each and everyone of you as I was one of the many allowed to partake in the fruit of your labour.

I salute and honour you all as a co-labourer of Messiah Y'shua (Jesus Christ).

I pray that you will continue to enrich the Body of Messiah with your gifts and that you will run the full race until the time of His coming!

MANY blessings!!

Amanda

March 2015

Book Resources:

1. Books by the Sandford Family:
 - The Transformation of the Inner Man
 - Healing of the Wounded Spirit
 - Restoring the Christian Family
 - Healing Victims of Sexual Abuse
 - Deliverance and Inner Healing
 - Renewal of the Mind
 - Healing Woman's Emotions
2. They Shall Expel Demons — Derek Prince.
3. Schemes of Satan — Mike Warnke
4. Secrets of Your Family Tree — Dave Carder MA; Dr. Earl Henslin; Dr. John Townsend; Dr. Henry Cloud.
5. The Beautiful Side of Evil — Johanna Michaelson.
6. Free Indeed — Tom Marshall
7. Healing from the Inside Out — Tom Marshall
8. No Longer a Victim — Burton Stokes and Lynn Lucas
9. How to Conduct Spiritual Warfare — Mary Garrison
10. Beauty for Ashes — Joyce Meyer
11. The Wounded Heart — Dr. Larry Crabb
12. How to Cast Out Demons — Dorris Wagner
13. Possessing the Gates of the Enemy — Cindy Jacobs
14. Deep Wounds, Deep Healing — Charles H. Craft
15. Tired of Trying to Measure Up — Jeff van Vonderen
16. Dealing with the Rejection and the Praise of Man — Bob Sorge.
17. Books by Watchman Nee:
 - The Latent Power of the Soul
 - The Spiritual Man
18. Books by Rebecca Brown
 - He Came to Set the Captives Free
 - Prepare for War
 - Becoming a Vessel of Honour
 - Unbroken Curses
19. Books by William Schnoebelen:
 - Wicca, Satan's Little White Lie
 - Masonry: Beyond the Light
 - Blood on the Doorposts

20. Seductions Exposed — Gary L Greenwald

21. Books by Gary Chapman:

- The Five Love Languages
- Five Signs of a Loving Family
- The Other Side of Love

22. *AND MANY, MANY, MORE!!*

- Books and articles that I have sourced any information from in the past more or less TEN years, I have referenced as footnotes in the specific materials. (This was when South Africa started going more electronic, and Internet access was more available. It was also when I personally became computer literate!!)

Courses:

- Elijah House — Basic School for the Ministry of Counselling
- Fiona Desfontein — Posses the Land
- Selwyn Hughes — Carer and Counsellors Course
- Tom Hawkins - Restoring Shattered Lives
- Steve Ogilvie - Deprogramming
- Jim Wilder - Joy and Bonding
- Ed Khouri - Belonging
- Personal Training with Doug Riggs on ministering to DID/SRA

Practical Guidelines for Prayer Ministers

Because of the nature of the material that will be presented during this course, it is essential that those who attend do so subject to the following conditions:

1. That you obtain the permission of the pastor of the local assembly to which you belong. Please ask your pastor to sign in the designated area at the bottom of this form. You must be an active member of your local assembly.
2. That you have already thoroughly worked through the J2F and J2W series.
3. That you indemnify Kanaan Ministries from any responsibility or liability resulting from the use of the material. This indemnity is required because: **every person's own background, experience, and value system will result in a unique perspective that will have an impact on the use of the material:**
 - The level of experience of the counsellor will impact the effectiveness of the use of the material.
 - It is essential that ALL parties in a counselling session accept the Biblical Principle that Messiah Y'shua (Jesus Christ of Nazareth), the Son of God Who came in the flesh, is the only Way, the Truth, and the Life.
 - It is essential that the counsellor is submitted to and under the covering of a local congregation, that the leadership acknowledge the gifts and subsequently have released the counsellor to minister (Proverbs 18:16).
 - It is essential that the leadership of that particular local congregation approve the material.

SIGNED: _____ (*Applicant for Prayer Minister*)

SIGNED: _____ (*Pastor of Local Assembly*)

Name of Congregation: _____

A Note to Counsellors

YOU are the Testimony

GOD is teaching us about entering into His Rest. Once we realize the freedom which we find in serving Him, we will be **truly efficient** as workers in His Kingdom.

We should not try to “perform” (i.e. be motivated by fear), but let **GOD's Love** motivate our efforts.

Somehow there is a deeply rooted perception that our achievements determine who we are, i.e. a pastor shepherding a fairly large assembly with all its programs running smoothly, would be regarded as a successful pastor. Or, if you are earning a good income to supply in all the material needs of your family, you would be regarded as a success in the eyes of the world.

Eventually you end up with a never-ending list of things which you feel compelled to do in order to “qualify” keeping your home spotless, jogging ten kilometers or praying for ten hours daily, etc. ...

If this is how one sees life, one could get caught up in a pattern of continuous competition, trying to please everybody of significance, for example Mom, Dad, the Boss, my Pastor, GOD, or myself.

Whenever we testify, we always say what “we” have done for GOD, without realizing that we are in fact justifying ourselves instead of glorifying GOD.

Dear fellow pilgrim — this represents a misconception concerning the Christian Walk, since it is based upon and motivated by our own religious pride (own achievement) as well as by fear of rejection if we should fail to “perform”.

This is **not** the freedom unto which GOD has called us to.

Your value is not determined by what you can do for GOD — what we are, is because of what He, in His Great Mercy and Compassion, has chosen to do in us through Y’shua¹ (Jesus). We are the living proof of the fact that Y’shua (Jesus) lives and reigns as King of the Universe. Y’shua (Jesus), Who initiated the good work in us, will also complete it (**Philippians 1:6**).

¹ *Y’shua* (Hebrew) is Jesus’ real name, which means “Salvation”. We have no problem with the name “Jesus” — it is merely the Greek transliteration of “Y’shua”. Jesus is the name most of us grew up with. Remember though, Y’shua was a Jew, of the Tribe of Judah, not a Greek. It’s sort of like this ... when you come to know someone’s real name, you want to use it, hence the use of *Y’shua* instead of Jesus. Another powerful reason to use Y’shua is that every time you say His Name, you are proclaiming “Salvation”. You will also note in some places, we have used the real Name of the FATHER, YHVH. The Name is made up of the Hebrew letters, Yod-Hey-Vav-Hey, and is most commonly pronounced “Yahweh” or “Jehovah”. Again, we have chosen to use this, as YHVH is the FATHER’s Name.

He transforms us from being lost, rejected and filled with fear, unto the glorious position of redeemed sons and daughters of the Living GOD, new creations in Messiah.

The Testimony of Y'shua (Jesus) is the work which He has done and is still doing in us. By the power of His Love we are daily being transformed into the image of Christ. This self-imposed labour of love has its beginning and end in Y'shua (Jesus).

But we have to abide in Him and He in us, because just as the branch can bear no fruit unless it remains in the vine, we can bear no fruit unless we remain in Him.

The Word of GOD says that we can do nothing without Y'shua (Jesus). If we believe this, we can truly worship Him in Spirit and in Truth.

Once we understand this, we can work as co-labourers in the Kingdom of GOD, partners in proclaiming the Gospel and co-heirs with Christ.

While we are being perfected in the Image of Christ by the renewal of our minds, He produces fruit **through us** and **in us**, the glory being His alone, so that we can give Him all the worship and honour.

As we begin to grasp this truth, we will start to operate in freedom, enabled by His Power and motivated by His Love and Joy, being co-labourers of Messiah in the Vineyard of GOD, instead of trying to please GOD through our own efforts.

Y'shua (Jesus) is not interested in what **you** can do. He is busy, doing a work **in you**. He is the One Who went before us so that we could be renewed into His Image.

Y'shua (Jesus) Himself prompted by the Love and Pleasure of the Father, is preparing a Bride to be handed to GOD as a trophy to the Love and Grace of the Father.

He is calling you to work alongside Him while He is also working **in you** so that through you, others can be transformed into His Image to the glory of the Father.

YOU are His Testimony! To GOD be ALL the GLORY!!!

Liability Release Form

This is a simple statement to officially inform you that ***I am not a professional counsellor.*** The nature and purpose of my ministry is discipleship, not counselling.

I am not trained in psychology, nor have I been trained in any type of secular counselling. My emphasis is in the direction of the Word of GOD, and I train people to search the Scriptures (the Bible) for ***their answers to life's problems.***

It is not in my power to “heal” you. I am willing to direct you to the One Who ***does*** have the power to heal your broken heart and bind up your wounds — the “Wonderful Counsellor, Almighty GOD, Eternal Father, the Prince of Peace” (Isaiah 9:6).

I have learned to use some tools that can help you search for and retrieve forgotten, painful memories for the purpose of attaining healing for those wounds.

In my own personal experience, and through working with others in one-on-one ministry, I have learned that ***until the original source of our pain is uncovered, we have little change of living a life free of bondage.***

Amazing changes take place in our lives when we uncover the true source of our feelings of rejection, depression, bitterness, fear, or anger.

I am willing to be a partner with you in your search to know the truth about yourself. However, you must:

1. Desire to know the truth ***regardless of what that truth may be*** (John 8:31-32).
2. Believe that the Holy Spirit Alone has the power to reveal truth (John 16:13). I do not know what has happened to you and I possess no power to uncover it for you.

If you agree to my praying, questioning, and seeking Biblical Truth ***with you,*** then please sign this form.

In signing this form, you agree that I am not responsible for, nor can I be held liable for the content of any memories that surface during our meetings.

You also agree to hold me harmless and blameless from the results or later effects of any memories that you have, or may recall in the future.

I did not create the trauma of your past, and I cannot control the impact that these events may have on your life, either now, or in the future.

We advise that you continue to get counsel from all of those sources who have been helpful and open for you.

We will not advise you to terminate other counsel — this is entirely your decision.

We will not give any kind of medical advice concerning physical symptoms or medication. This is your decision, along with that of your doctor.

Sign: _____

Date: _____

Sign: _____

Date: _____

Witness: _____

Date: _____



Introduction:

Kingdom Spheres
of Authority

- **APPLICATION OF J2F/J2W: TAKING UP YOUR KINGDOM MANDATE**

We have walked this JOURNEY of healing and restoration – taking back what the enemy has stolen from our families and us. Part of fulfilling the Great Commission is applying what you have learnt and helping the wounded and broken world around you. We very clearly understood from the teachings about Man's Purpose that we have been called to take up our DOMINION authority that GOD gave to Adam and Eve at the beginning of creation.

The following teaching is to help you understand how you need to fulfill your Godly calling as KINGS and PRIESTS on earth – that you have been given a Godly Mandate to set the captives free!

Thank you for being prepared to also walk through this part of the training in helping you to apply all you have learnt in J2F and J2W to learn how to:

*The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me, **because the Lord has anointed and qualified me to preach the Gospel of good tidings to the meek, the poor, and afflicted; He has sent me to bind up and heal the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the [physical and spiritual] captives and the opening of the prison and of the eyes to those who are bound,** ² To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord [the year of His favor] and the day of vengeance of our GOD, to comfort all who mourn, ³ To **grant [consolation and joy] to those who mourn in Zion—to give them an ornament (a garland or diadem) of beauty instead of ashes, the oil of joy instead of mourning, the garment [expressive] of praise instead of a heavy, burdened, and failing spirit—that they may be called oaks of righteousness [lofty, strong, and magnificent, distinguished for uprightness, justice, and right standing with GOD], the planting of the Lord, that He may be glorified.** ⁴ And **they shall rebuild the ancient ruins; they shall raise up the former desolations and renew the ruined cities, the devastations of many generations.** 6a) ⁶ But **you shall be called the priests of the Lord; people will speak of you as the ministers of our GOD.***

- **REVIEW**

We want to remind you that we started the JOURNEY by learning all about our PURPOSE and our GIFTS. This creates CAPACITY to be able to deal with the GIANTS in our lives and to be able to MAINTAIN our deliverance. We made a detailed study of:

Romans 12:4-8 *"For as in one physical body we have many parts (organs, members) and all of these parts do not have the same function or use, ⁵ So we, numerous as we are, are ONE Body in Christ (the Messiah) and individually we are parts one of another [mutually dependent on one another]. ⁶ Having gifts (faculties, talents, qualities) that differ according to the grace given us, let us use them: [He whose gift is] **1. prophecy**, [let him prophesy] according to the proportion of his faith; ⁷ [He whose gift is] **2. practical service**, let him give himself to serving; he who **3. teaches**, to his teaching; ⁸ He who **4. exhorts** (encourages), to his exhortation; he who **5. contributes**, let him do it in simplicity and liberality; he who gives **6. aid and superintends**, with zeal and singleness of mind; he who does **7. acts of mercy**, with genuine cheerfulness and joyful eagerness."*



To be able to live out our KINGDOM MANDATE, we have to receive the PROMISE of the FATHER – The Baptism of the Ruach (Holy Spirit)!

Without the PROMISE of the Father, we will NEVER be able to move in HIS authority and fulfill the calling to take DOMINION.

Acts 1:4-5 *“And while being in their company and eating with them, He commanded them not to leave Jerusalem but to wait for what the Father had promised, of which [He said] you have heard Me speak. 5 For John baptized with water, but not many days from now you shall be baptized with (placed in, introduced into) the Holy Spirit.*

We also saw the letter-pic in Hebrew of the PROMISE: the RUACH HA-KODESH (the Holy Spirit). Ruach is spelt:

- **RESH** = the King steps down from His Throne to be personally available,
- **CHET** = an open-air chuppah, a place where couples celebrate a covenant.

Putting the letters together, the picture we get is that *the Spirit of GOD is that Attribute of GOD which is personally with each child of the Covenant in order to celebrate the marriage partnership ... the Spirit is the visible tangible Presence that represents our Stronger Partner in the Covenant along this life's journey!*

• THE KING AND THE KINGDOM

A kingdom is centered around a king and how he rules his kingdom.

1 Timothy 6:15 *“15 Which [appearing] will be shown forth in His own proper time by the blessed, only Sovereign (Ruler), the King of kings and the Lord of lords,”*

Every kingdom has a king, and underneath him is a hierarchy of people.

A KING of kings is one who is a supreme king, with other regional territorial rulers underneath them.

Y'shua (Jesus) is KING of kings — over the political kings of the earth and every other rule or authority.

Ephesians 1:21 *“Far above all rule and authority and power and dominion and every name that is named [above every title that can be conferred], not only in this age and in this world, but also in the age and the world which are to come.”*

We are made kings and priests:

Revelation 5:10 *“And You have made them a kingdom (royal race) and priests to our GOD, and **they shall reign [as kings] over the earth!**”*

- **EXAMPLES AND USAGE OF “KING OF KINGS”**

The phrase *king of kings* is used in Scripture six times. Once, the title is applied to GOD the Father ([1 Timothy 6:15](#)), and twice to the Lord Jesus ([Revelation 17:14](#); [19:16](#)).

The other three ([Ezra 7:12](#); [Ezekiel 26:7](#); [Daniel 2:37](#)) refer to either Artaxerxes or Nebuchadnezzar, kings who used the phrase to express their absolute sovereignty over their respective realms (Persia and Babylon).

Nebuchadnezzar:

Daniel 2:37 *“You, O king, are **king of the [earthly] kings** to whom the GOD of heaven has given the kingdom, the power, the might, and the glory.”*

(Another example of a king of kings was Julius Ceaser. An example of a king under a king of kings was Herod.)

The phrase *lord of lords* is used by itself in Scripture twice and refers to GOD the Father ([Deuteronomy 10:17](#); [Psalm 136:3](#)).

In [Revelation 19:16](#) Jesus is given the full title “KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS” ([Revelation 17:14](#) switches it: “Lord of lords and King of kings”).

The title indicates someone who has the power to exercise absolute dominion over all His realm. In the case of the Lord Jesus, the realm is all of creation. In John’s vision, Jesus is returning to judge the world and establish His earthly Kingdom, as He predicted in [Mark 13:26](#).

When Jesus is called “King of kings and Lord of lords,” it means that, in the end, all other rulers will be conquered or abolished, and He alone will reign supreme as King and Lord of all the earth.

There is no power, no king, and no lord who can oppose Him and win. There are myriad references to this absolute rule of Jesus and His preeminence over other rulers throughout Scripture.

To mention just a few, [Isaiah 40:23–24](#) says that the Lord brings “princes to nothing” and makes earth’s rulers “emptiness.” The mere breath of the Lord will “carry them off like stubble.” Daniel’s vision of the son of man in [Daniel 7:13–14](#) is of one whom he calls “the Ancient of Days” whose everlasting dominion is over all people, nations and languages.

In the New Testament, we get a better view of the One these passages refer to. The writer of Hebrews speaks of the Lord Jesus: “He is the radiance of the glory of GOD and the exact imprint of His Nature, and He upholds the universe by the Word of His power” ([Hebrews 1:3](#)). The next verse speaks of Y’shua (Jesus) being “much superior” to the angels. Clearly, His rule over creation is absolute.

Paul makes the point that Y’shua (Jesus) was humbled in His earthly ministry and that His humiliation will result in glorification. In [Philippians 2:5–11](#), Paul discusses the extent to which Y’shua (Jesus) went to atone for sinners; Jesus’ perfect obedience is the reason that “GOD has highly exalted Him and bestowed on Him the Name that is above every name, so that at the Name of Y’shua (Jesus) every knee should bow, in Heaven and on earth and under the earth, and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of GOD the Father” (vv. 9–11). The Suffering Servant becomes the King of kings (see [Isaiah 53:10–12](#)).

Finally, in the Book of Revelation we see the Kingship of Y’shua (Jesus) made manifest. In chapter 5, the Lamb (Jesus) is the only one in all creation found worthy to open the scroll containing the judgments of GOD (vv. 2–5). In chapter 11, we hear voices in heaven proclaiming that the kingdom of the world has become the Kingdom of Christ and that He will reign forever and ever (v. 15). In chapter 12, we read that the authority of Messiah is what causes Satan to be thrown down to earth (vv. 9–10).

In [Revelation 17:12–14](#), the Lamb conquers all those arrayed against Him, and John stresses that He conquers *because* He is King of kings and Lord of lords. Finally, in chapter 19, we read of Jesus’ triumphant coming to strike the nations and tread the winepress of the wrath of GOD, having the authority to do so because He is King of kings and Lord of lords (vv. 11–16).

Fundamentally, the idea of Y’shua (Jesus) being King of kings and Lord of lords means that there is no higher authority. His reign over all things is absolute and inviolable.

GOD raised Him from the dead and placed Him over all things, “far above all rule and authority and power and dominion, and above every name that is named, not only in this age but also in the one to come. And He put all things under His Feet and gave Him as Head over all things to the church, which is His Body, the fullness of Him who fills all in all” ([Ephesians 1:21–23](#)).

- **SPHERES OF AUTHORITY**

Authority always goes from the king of kings to the kings below him.

The kings below the King of kings are all appointed to a specific sphere of authority. That sphere of authority comes as a result of a definition of their calling. To understand their sphere of authority, they have to understand to where they have been called to.

Only within this sphere of authority do they have the right to reign as a king. If they go in to another king's geography and try to exert their authority, it doesn't work!

If they go in to a wasteland that is not under the authority of the King of kings under whom he stands, then his authority will not work.

The authority that a king has under a King of kings only works where they are assigned to operate because that is where the king of Kings, their source of authority, appoints them to work. Their authority actually comes from their submission to a higher authority.



Y'shua (Jesus) is the King of kings. We are all kings under His authority.

We have to know what is our appointed sphere of authority so that we will not be trying to rule in someone else's sphere of authority.

A king has a kingdom - you need to find out what kingdom do **you** rule over. If you don't know where you are supposed to rule, then there is absolute chaos/lawlessness in that area.

Once you have determined your sphere of authority, every time you use your authority, the army of the King of kings would show up and fight for you!

Revelation 1:5-6 "5 And from Jesus Christ the faithful and trustworthy Witness, the Firstborn of the dead [first to be brought back to life] and the Prince (Ruler) of the kings of the earth. To Him Who ever loves us and has once [for all] loosed and freed us from our sins by His own blood, 6 And formed us into a kingdom (a royal race), priests to His GOD and Father—to Him be the glory and the power and the majesty and the dominion throughout the ages and forever and ever. Amen (so be it)."

We need to understand what principles we need to apply to this Kingdom-living. We are kings underneath a King and we have to take our orders and fulfill our kingly duty in our appointed sphere of authority.

- **HOW DOES GOD MAKE US A KINGDOM?**

Every kingdom has laws and principles that govern every area of living. Our KING has set-out His Laws/Principles in the WORD. We need to be taking orders from our KING — and fulfill our kingly duty in our appointed sphere of authority.

We have been blessed with every spiritual blessing in Heavenly places. We are seated with Messiah in Heavenly Places. We have access to all these blessings and provisions in Heavenly places when we are engaged in performing our gifts and our purpose.

GOD does not release all the blessings and provisions for our call from Heaven when we are not doing our call. He puts us in our call, He puts us in our sphere of authority, and He gives us everything we need to rule and reign in it.

2 Peter 1:3-4 *“For His Divine power has **bestowed upon us all things** that [are requisite and suited] to life and Godliness, through the [full, personal] knowledge of Him Who called us by and to His own glory and excellence (virtue). ⁴ By means of these He has bestowed on us His precious and exceedingly **great promises**, so that through them you may escape [by flight] from the moral decay (rottenness and corruption) that is in the world because of covetousness (lust and greed), and become sharers (partakers) of the divine nature.”*

The beginning journey of every believer’s life should be an identification of call and purpose. Just going to a local fellowship, listening to the sermon, and going home is not fulfilling the Kingdom call.

People need to be trained to FIRST identify their call and purpose — people will not walk in their anointing until they understand what their call and purpose is.

Anointing is a spiritual endowment for a particular purpose.

Y’shua (Jesus) repeatedly told His disciples that He knew what His Purpose was and that He has to fulfill the reason for which He was sent. He came and established the Kingdom of GOD through His death and resurrection.

We all have a purpose and we all have a calling and our provision from Heaven is unlocked with the KEY of understanding that call and that appointment and that purpose.

Some have greater spheres to rule over than others — this is the parable of the talents — but SIZE doesn’t count!! It is the fulfillment of the purpose that counts.

For example — one person could be called to start a congregation of 20,000 people in a major city where another missionary might be called to reach 100 people in an unknown tribe. The reward is all about fulfilling the purpose.

No matter how big or seemingly impossible your calling — GOD will supply all your needs! If He has called you — He WILL PROVIDE (“my GOD will supply all your needs”).

Our provision is stored up in Heavenly Places — there is provision for any size vision in Heavenly Places. Just begin to walk out your calling and purpose ...

We have to engage Heaven for the resources necessary to fulfill our appointment as a king.

No king will have to do everything by himself — by submitting to our KING and walking in HIS WAYS — a king will have access to all of the KING of kings' resources necessary to do the job.

We must begin to engage GOD for our purpose because He determined what we would do before our birth. When we understand our purpose, the anointing is released for us to fulfill our calling and purpose.

Before anyone stepped in to the office of prophet, priest or king in the Scriptures, they were anointed with oil. This gave them the spiritual endowment necessary to operate according to the appointment that GOD assigned them to.

We are walking extensions of GOD's Kingdom. When we begin to walk according to our purpose we begin to exhort authority in the earth realm like a king in that arena.

Our spirit is like a pipe — it is within us — but it is also raised up and seated with Y'shua (Jesus) in Heavenly Places (Ephesians 2:6).

The “pipe” sources all of Heaven and is trying to get Heaven out of us and in to this world — all the provision and authority of GOD — everything GOD stands for.

When we get our heart in alignment with the Kingdom of GOD and we begin to believe that what GOD says is true — His Word and His Promises — this opens up our heart and our spirit, and what GOD is trying to put through our spirit will begin to come through our hearts and will start manifesting in our lives.

Our hearts is where the programs of our lives are run. Y'shua (Jesus) must sit and abide as King and Lord in our HEARTS (our subconscious mind) for Heaven to flow through us.



•THE KINGDOM OF GOD IS NOT JUST IN THE ASSEMBLY

There are SEVEN main spheres (called the “Seven Mountains”):

- Religion
- Business/Finances
- Arts/Entertainment
- Government/Politics
- Family
- Media
- Education

Revelation 17:1, 7, 9 “One of the seven angels who had the seven bowls then came and spoke to me, saying, Come with me! I will show you the doom (sentence, judgment) of the great harlot (idolatress) who is seated on many waters, 7 But the angel said to me, Why do you wonder? I will explain to you the [secret symbolic meaning of the] mystery of the woman, as well as of the beast having the seven heads and ten horns that carries her. 9 **The seven heads are seven hills** upon which the woman is sitting;

A number of years ago GOD spoke to two men — Loren Cunningham and Bill Bright — He showed them simultaneously the seven major spheres of influence the Kingdom of GOD would need to take from the enemy in order to change the fabric of society. They would need to take back the seven heads represented by these seven hills.

GOD wants to send His soldiers as KINGS into these spheres of authority in the family realm — how our society views and creates family according to these seven spheres.

There are technologies and inventions stored up in people's Heavenly places that will change the way the world works. Once those people who have these assignments begin to tap in to them, they will come — GOD has them stored up — He is waiting on us.

All seven spheres are ministry avenues — GOD is changing the way things are done. You can't reach the world from behind the four walls of an assembly building. An occasional outreach is not the way things will get done according to GOD's Kingdom.

GOD, in this hour, is raising up an army of KINGS to rule and reign within these areas of society.

GOD is going to bring an end-time revival upon unshakable foundations where we are releasing the Kingdom of GOD into society to transform the culture of entire geographies.

Matthew 24:14 *"And this **good news of the kingdom** (the Gospel) will be preached throughout the whole world as a **testimony to all the nations**, and then will come the end."*

The Gospel of the Kingdom is the good news that the Kingdom of GOD is here.
Where is it?

Luke 17:20-21 *"Asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of GOD would come, He replied to them by saying, The kingdom of GOD does not come with signs to be observed or with visible display, Nor will people say, Look! Here [it is]! or, See, [it is] there! For behold, **the kingdom of GOD is within you [in your hearts] and among you [surrounding you].**"*

• CONCLUSION

GOD is the King of kings — we are the kings. As kings we have sub-kingdoms which are appointed spheres of authority. We have assignments that may reside in any facet of society.

When we operate according to our purpose our anointing is activated and we operate with kingly authority in our sphere of assignment. GOD's Whole Provision is behind us and it cannot be stopped.

We are to go and establish Kingdom rulership in our appointed spheres and dictate the edicts of GOD into them as rulers over them. Heavenly places give us the resources necessary as they overlap geographies appointed to us, releasing the blessings of Heaven in to them.

FATHER, take our faith to the next level! Let Your Kingdom come and Your Will be done on earth as it is in Heaven — AMEN!

PLEASE NOTE: We have DELEGATED authority in the Name of Y'shua (Jesus) - beware of PRIDE and self-exaltation! Humility is the KEY. Lucifer is the king of PRIDE and one needs to be careful not to step in to that trap!

- **MORE UNDERSTANDING ON HEAVENLY PLACES**

“What are the heavenly places/realms?”

ANSWER: The phrase “heavenly places” or “heavenly realms” is used several times in the Book of Ephesians (1:3, 20; 2:6; 3:10; 6:12). This phrase is translated from the Greek word *epouranios*, meaning “the sphere of spiritual activities.”

“Heavenly realms” can refer to both angelic and demonic activity. [Ephesians 1:20](#) says that GOD “raised Christ from the dead and seated Him at His Right Hand in the heavenly realms.”

But [Ephesians 6:12](#) speaks of evil forces in the same realm: “Our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against ... the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms.”

As flesh-and-blood humans, we have very little understanding of the spirit world. We cannot see, hear, or touch it. However, the Bible assumes it, and we can glean insight into a world we cannot see by studying what GOD tells us about it.

First of all, GOD is Spirit ([John 4:24](#)). He exists outside the bounds of time, space, and matter. His home is called Heaven ([Acts 7:55](#); [Isaiah 63:15](#)), but this is a distinct place, not to be confused with “the heavens,” referring to the atmosphere ([Genesis 1:1](#); [Psalm 148:4](#)), or the “heavenly realms,” which encompass all spirit beings.

In GOD’s Heaven, He sits on a Throne ([Matthew 23:22](#); [Hebrews 4:16](#)), surrounded by adoring angels ([Revelation 7:11](#); [Psalm 99:1](#)) who exist to serve GOD and minister to His saints ([Hebrews 1:14](#); [Matthew 4:11](#); [Genesis 19:1](#)). Angels also have the ability to appear as men when sent to deliver messages from GOD ([Genesis 18:2, 16–17](#); [19:1–2](#); [Daniel 10:5–6](#)).

However, the dark side of the heavenly realms belongs to [Satan](#) and his evil spirits. Satan is not the counterpart to GOD. GOD has no challenger. Satan is a created being who has only the power GOD allows him to have for only as long as GOD allows it ([Isaiah 14:12](#); [Luke 22:31](#); [Revelation 12:12](#)). Yet, for reasons known only to GOD, Satan and his minions are allowed to wreak havoc upon the earth and the servants of GOD—if unchecked by spiritual warfare and the holy angels.

[Daniel 10](#) gives us the best glimpse into what happens in this world we cannot see. An angel was dispatched by GOD to deliver a message to [Daniel](#) as he prayed, but the messenger was detained for three weeks by “the prince of Persia,” a demon (verse 13). The angel later told Daniel that he had to have help from Michael the [archangel](#) in order to prevail and continue on the assignment GOD had given him.

This glimpse into the heavenly realms helps us understand a few things.

1. First, we learn that there is fierce warfare taking place at all times. Satan and his [demons](#) are actively working to thwart the plans of GOD and destroy whatever they can (see [John 10:10](#)). If a mighty angel on a mission from GOD could be detained by demonic forces, then demons must have great power.
2. Second, GOD does not leave His children defenseless against this evil army. [Second Corinthians 10:4](#) says, “For the weapons of our warfare are not of the flesh but have divine power to destroy strongholds.” [Ephesians 6:11–17](#) tells us exactly what armour we need to stand firm against the temptations and schemes of the devil. In ourselves, we are no match for Satan’s devices. We need [spiritual armour](#) to fight spiritual battles.
3. The third truth we can learn from the Daniel passage is that prayer gets GOD’s attention and that His answer is on the way.

There are forces unknown to us that may interfere with GOD’s desire to aid us, and we must continue to persevere in prayer until the answer comes (see [Luke 18:1](#); [Ephesians 6:18](#)).

The heavenly realms are as real as the earthly realms. We will spend most of our lives living in the heavenly realms ([2 Corinthians 5:1](#); [1 John 5:11](#)).

In contrast, our earthly existence is only a “vapour that appears for a little while and is gone” ([James 4:14](#)).

Physical battles may seem intense, but the results are temporary. However, spiritual battles have eternal consequences.

When we live our earthly lives in recognition of the unseen battles that rage all around us, we will be more careful about what we say and do ([Ephesians 5:15–16](#); [2 Corinthians 2:11](#)).

We will be faithful to utilize our weapons of prayer and the armour of GOD, knowing that the real battles are fought and won in the heavenly realms.

Chapter 1:

Introduction
to Deliverance
Ministry

Deliverance breaks the power of the enemy; walking in the Spirit breaks the pattern of sin.

What is DELIVERANCE?

There is no such ministry as a "*Deliverance ministry*". This ministry is given to the **entire Body of Jesus Christ**. We nevertheless see **special anointing** on certain people for **specific ministries**, such as healing, deliverance, prayer for the Baptism in the Holy Spirit, etc..

You will recognize this anointing by **taking note of the people who cross your path**. Your gift makes room for you. Is their need mainly healing or deliverance? The Lord will send people according to the anointing on your life, and so you will function in one area more than in others.

The Life of Y'SHUA (Jesus).

Acts 10:38 *How God anointed and consecrated Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with **strength and ability and power**; how He went about doing good and, in particular, curing all who were **harassed and oppressed by the power of the devil**, for God was with Him.*

When the Gospel is ministered in power, it will always result in confrontation with the kingdom of darkness.

Luke 4:14 *Then Jesus went back **full of and under the power of the Holy Spirit** into Galilee ...*



The anointing confuses and terrifies demons so that they identify themselves. (**Mark 1:23-27**). After the first demon was chased out of the Body of Messiah, the persecution began. Deliverance is for the children of God, not for the world.

The Body of Messiah.

Mark 3:14-15 *And He appointed twelve to continue to be with Him, and that He might send them out to preach and to **have authority and power to heal the sick and to drive out demons**.*

These twelve disciples had exactly the same ministry as Jesus had on earth — to preach the Gospel and to cast out demons.

Luke 9:1-2 *Then Jesus called together **the Twelve** and gave them **power and authority over all demons**, and to cure diseases, and He sent them out to announce and preach the Kingdom of God and to bring healing.*

To preach the Kingdom of Jesus and to cast out demons go hand in hand and cannot be separated.

Luke 10:1-2 Now after this the Lord chose and appointed **seventy others** and sent them out ahead of Him, **two by two**, into every town and place where He Himself was about to come visit. And He said to them, The harvest indeed is abundant, but the farmhands are few. Pray therefore the Lord of the harvest to send out labourers into His harvest.

Seventy are sent out with the same commission. **Luke 10: 17-21**: Demons are confronted and must submit.

The COMMISSION.

Mark 16:17-18 And these signs will follow those who believe: In My Name they **will cast out demons**; they **will speak with new tongues**; they **will take up serpents**; and if they drink anything deadly, it **will** by no means hurt them; they **will lay hands on the sick**, and they **will recover**.

The Body of Messiah has become afraid to cast out demons. Some endeavour to have a little 'deliverance corner' because **not everyone wants to soil their hands!** The Body **must** start flowing in this ministry, especially today, where occult involvement is rapidly increasing; otherwise we will not be able to keep the people who have been saved.

These people will not be able to live victoriously and will experience spiritual blockages that will hinder their spiritual growth.

Promise to the Body of Messiah:

Matthew 16:18 "18 And I tell you, you are Peter [Greek, Petros—a large piece of rock], and on this rock [Greek, petra—a huge rock like Gibraltar] I will build My church, and **the gates of Hades (the powers of the infernal region) shall not overpower it** [or be strong to its detriment or hold out against it]."

****WARNING!**** Do not specialize in this ministry to the point where all you do all day and every day is to cast out demons — an imbalance will set in. You also have to function in other areas. Remember that praise and worship are very important.

Why are some people healed when being prayed for and others not? The person praying represents the Body of Messiah. Many people in the Body of Messiah do not live clean and holy lives — thus, there is **corporate sin** and that gives the devil the right to petition and stop the healing.

Deliverance ministry is TWO-fold.

23. **The unsaved** (during evangelization); many accept Jesus, but very few stay on the road.

24. **Children of God** in the Body of Messiah — those who are still bound.

We must learn to minister to the person in **totality** — **not just to pray a sinner's prayer**. Everyone needs to work through J2F/J2W and to close doors!

Deliverance in the **BODY OF MESSIAH.**

Proverbs 21:22 *A wise man scales the city walls of the mighty and brings down the **stronghold** in which they trust.*



After a person is saved, he must receive constant **ministry** in order to become strong himself so that he in turn can reproduce. **Home cells** can function very effectively in this. Strongholds in people's lives need to be dealt with. Today the Body of Messiah continually produces Christians with problems looking for answers instead of them having the answer to the world. The Body of Messiah **must** make disciples.

The enemy has succeeded in **binding the Body of Messiah with FEAR**; fear of the devil, demons, deliverance. People are afraid to be involved and do not even want to talk about it. **It is really ignorance!**

****NOTE!**** Jesus Himself dealt with demons; so what makes us more spiritual than He was?

According to **Matthew 16:18** God says you are qualified for this ministry — **BELIEVE IT!!** People believe the lie that you need experience before you can pray. We don't pray for people because we want to — it is a command!

What does the believer need?

- **FAITH:** Get the Word into your **heart** — **not just in your head.** (The enemy works from a **platform of lies and fear.**) Satan **WILL** try and stop you — know it and be prepared.
- Know your **AUTHORITY** over the works of darkness (Luke 10:19 — authority and power over ALL demons). Authority is in the **Name of Jesus.** “In the Name of Jesus” **is not a chant** — we are truly **IN** Christ! Also know the **POWER** of the Holy Spirit. Tune into the Holy Spirit.
- **PROTECTION:** THE BLOOD OF JESUS — it is a living sign of our Covenant with God the Father.

Five general problem areas in the ministry of deliverance in the Body of Messiah:

1. People who want deliverance when the problem is one of the **flesh**, e.g. lust, anger, gluttony, etc.. These problems can have spiritual roots, but sometimes it has **carneal roots**, e.g. no self-control. The counsellor needs to discern in these situations.

2. People who want **instant** deliverance from **all** their problems. Often they have been to many counsellors and tried to find someone who “has enough power to deliver them”. **There is no quick fix.** The person must **study** and **meditate** upon the Word, pray, worship, etc.. We must work at getting back ground from Satan.
3. People who are **passive** and want **you to do everything**. They do not want to apply **James 4:7**.

James 4:7 “So be subject to God. Resist the devil [stand firm against him], and he will flee from you.”

4. People who want deliverance when in fact they need **teaching**.
5. People who want deliverance for a **third party**, e.g. marital problems — “*Just deliver my husband/wife, then all my problems will be solved.*”

When is deliverance necessary?

1. When there is a **spiritual blockage** as a result of an occult root or a curse (**Deuteronomy 29:18**), e.g. someone who sleeps during fellowship in the assembly.
2. When there is an **addiction**. It starts in the flesh, e.g. social drinks, pornography, etc..
3. When there are **root problems**, e.g. anger — **root/stronghold** is rebellion.
4. Some **diseases** are a result of **bondages** and then deliverance is necessary. **Luke 13:10-13, 16**.
5. When people **struggle with condemnation**, e.g. Catholicism (must pay for your sin). Someone with strong family roots in this faith must be cut loose from the root and the oppression that comes from this teaching. Continual condemnation can cause you to backslide. (See Prayers of Renunciation: Babylon)



Chapter 2:

Guideline
Principles

Justification	Sanctification	Deliverance
Sin from the past - rebirth - born again. Romans 3:24 Ephesians 1:13; 2:8-10	Present sin - HOLINESS. Romans 6:1-7 (Power of sin - not a list of do's and don'ts)	Lazarus - you loose the grave clothes; go further than just confessing sin - people are set free from bondages; dealing with the works of the devil. Colossians 2:14-15 1 John 3:5, 8
The wages of sin are removed the moment we are born again. Our position before God - we are saved through FAITH; justified without works by His GRACE. Our past is wiped out and we stand before God, innocent of any trespass. [If this is all an assembly teaches its congregation, no spiritual growth will take place (saved sinners!)]	Because we are born into this world, we are automatically under the law of sin and death. We must die to escape from this law (crucified with Christ). Baptism is a burial. Rebirth is a work of the Holy Spirit. Your heart changes, your desires become like God's Desires - sanctification. It takes place throughout your life and is a restoration that deals with the soul. [Deliverance does not change your heart and attitude]	Jesus died for us so that we can become partakers of His Righteousness. He went further and dealt with the powers of darkness so that deliverance from the legal contracts we made with the enemy became possible. Signs: (1) Physical, e.g. diseases, because of unforgiveness. (2) Mind - tortured. (3) Emotions - oppression. (4) Will - bondages.
FORGIVENESS	RESTORATION	DELIVERANCE

DIFFERENCE between SANCTIFICATION and DELIVERANCE.

Deliverance is **not** a substitute for:

- **REPENTANT CONVERSION** (*heart of David, not Saul*)

It does not simply mean a change of mind, but requires a 180° turn away from sin, e.g. an alcoholic - get rid of your bar. Beware of people who **run from counsellor (prayer minister) to counsellor** - look for a **secret sin** they hold on to. It also implies **hatred of evil** - the deeper your repentance, the greater your deliverance.

- **SELF-DISCIPLINE**

1 Corinthians 9:27 *I buffet my body and subdue it, for fear that after proclaiming to others the Gospel and things pertaining to it, I myself should become unfit.*

Without self discipline a person becomes **passive** and is in a chaotic state. Teach the person to create order in his own life. He/She must learn to read the Bible, to pray, to pay accounts, etc.. The person must realize that **he** is responsible to renew his mind and resist the enemy.

- **CRUCIFYING THE FLESH** (*cannot crucify a demon and drive out the flesh!*)

Carnal desires satisfy the senses. Here the **will** plays the most important role. Make a decision and prove it by your deeds, e.g. if alcohol or cigarettes hinder you, rid yourself of them. Nail them to the Cross! Do not live with a guilty conscience — then you are living a lie!

- **FORGIVENESS**

Matthew 18:34,35 *And in wrath his master turned him over to the torturers, till he should pay all that he owed. So also My Heavenly Father will deal with every one of you if you do not freely forgive your brother from your heart **his offenses**.*

Unforgiveness gives the enemy a legal right to bind a Christian. Hatred occurs in people who do not want to forgive others. It's not a demon of hatred that needs to be driven out — your heart's attitude must change!

The person who carries unforgiveness is the one who suffers. Do not counsel a person who does not want to forgive. He/She must forgive with **heart** and **mind**, no matter how difficult.

Areas that give the enemy LEGAL RIGHT.

Ephesians 4:26-27 *When **angry**, do not sin; do not ever let your wrath last until the sun goes down. Leave no room or foothold for the devil.*

1 John 5:18-19 *We know that anyone born of God does not practice committing sin, but the One Who was begotten of God carefully watches over and protects him, and the **wicked one does not lay hold on him**. We know that we are of God, and the whole world is under the power of the evil one.*

Proverbs 21:22 *A wise man scales the city walls of the mighty and brings down the stronghold in which they trust.*

Find out where the door was opened; where Satan got **legal ground**; where **strongholds** or **roots** are. Deal with the ground that has been given to Satan: Take it back, but do not counsel if the enemy still has legal ground. The person has to repent first, in order for you to gain a platform.

(6)Occult Roots

Occult roots can cause bondages in different ways, e.g. diseases like asthma, etc.. There are three steps in dealing with these roots:

a. The generational sins must be dealt with:

Pray in **FAITH** - **be careful of procedures**. [Much of what is done during deliverance is invisible to the naked eye.] Pray every prayer in faith. Concentrate on every word; do not let it become a ritual. When Jesus **cursed the fig tree**, the roots were cut off but the fruit was visible only the next day.

Give teaching before you pray — **explain what you're doing and why**. Work through repentance and renunciation of all sins identified while working through the checklist from J2F.



Also rebuke any curses, spoken curses, evil wishes, inherited diseases, confusion, oppressions, etc.. which are transferred down the generational line.

Be sensitive to the gift of a word of knowledge where the Holy Spirit reveals things to you in the generational line that need to be cut off. **(See Chapter 18 for additional bloodline information and prayers.)**

Then at the end, you engraft these cut-off ends of the spiritual umbilical cords into the Blood Line of the Real Vine - Jesus Christ - where all the advantages of Golgotha become ours: love, self-control, power, health, etc..

b. Examples of curses:

Examples:

- Divorce in family.
- Poverty, no matter how much money is earned and many more ... (see J2F series for curses on finances, as well as the prayer on Mammon and a petition for finances).

Stand on the Word when curses are being broken.

Proverbs 26:2 *Like the sparrow in her wandering, like the swallow in her flying, so the causeless curse does not alight.*

c. Renunciation:

Be careful of occultic valuables:

Deuteronomy 7:25-26 *The graven images of their gods you shall burn with fire. **You shall not desire the silver or gold that is on them, nor take it for yourselves, lest you be ensnared by it, for it is an abomination to the Lord your God. Neither shall you bring an abomination into your house, lest you become an accursed thing like it; but you shall utterly detest and abhor it, for it is an accursed thing.***

Acts 19:19 *And many of those who had practiced curious, magical arts **collected their books** and burned them in the sight of everybody...*

Destroy all occult objects, e.g. statues (e.g. Buddha), books, rings, symbols, etc.. People must confess and renounce with their own mouths, so that the ground can be taken back and every contract with the enemy be cancelled with the Blood of Jesus. Now close every door that you have opened.

PRAYER FOR CLEANSING OF YOUR HOME²

As you pray over your home I recommend taking oil and anointing every doorway and window throughout the house. As you go from room to room say the following first prayer (room by room prayer).

When finished praying for the whole house in a central area or outside (or both) with the second prayer.

*You will also want to remove all **occult objects** that you are aware of from your property if you truly desire to live in a sanctified home.*

1. Room by Room Prayer

Lord, You said in Your Word that he that dwells in the secret place of the Most High shall abide under the Shadow of the Almighty (Psalm 91:1).

I declare that this room is spiritually transitioned into Your secret place and now abides under Your Shadow.

I repent on behalf of every sin committed in this house including but not limited to fornication, idolatry, adultery, homosexuality, theft, coveting, drunkenness, revelry, and extortion (1 Corinthians 6:9-10).

I declare that this property is now being transitioned under the jurisdiction of the Kingdom of God and will from henceforth receive the blessings thereof. There shall no evil befall me neither shall any plague come near this dwelling (Psalm 91:10).

I apply the Blood of Y'shua (Jesus) over this home and every person that presently resides in it because we overcame the devil by the Blood of the Lamb and the word of our testimony (Revelation 12:11).

I now speak to every spirit that has taken up habitation in this dwelling place and I take authority over you according to my authority in Jesus Christ.

I cast you out, and command you to go to where the Lord Jesus sends you.

² By Dan Duval: <http://www.bridemovement.com/prayer-resources.html>

2. Speak this Over the Entire Home

To every evil spirit that has held influence over this home, I serve you an eviction notice and I divorce you from this property now in the mighty name of Jesus. If there are any hidden objects providing rights anywhere in this house or on this property, I declare that they are immediately exposed, that they are absolved of their demonic power and that all rights are cancelled in the Name of Jesus.

I speak over my home and declare that it is a habitation of righteousness, and a dwelling place for the presence of God (Exodus 15:2).

I close off former satanic access points and I decree that every portal and window of access to the demonic realm is now being shut and sealed in the Name of Y'shua (Jesus).

I declare that the Lord will now be a Wall of Fire round about this home (Zechariah 2:5).

Thank You Lord that this home is now being surrounded by angels above and below and against every dimensional access point in the Name of Y'shua (Jesus).

Lord I thank You for delivering my house and property from the curse, for it is written that Y'shua (Jesus) became a curse for us (Galatians 3:13), and I thank You for filling this home with Your Glorious Presence. AMEN!!

(4) Forgiveness

- Who has hurt you in the past?
- Did you ever want to hurt anyone?
- Have you ever cursed anyone (wished them ill)?

(5) Rebellion

- Why?
- Against the Lord?

(6) Fear of People

Many people need deliverance but are bound by the opinions of others, e.g. social drinks - you are too scared to take a stand. Much of deliverance CAN take place during praise and worship, but many people do not want to become involved - *what will the people say?*

Proverbs 29:25 *The fear of man brings a snare, but whoever leans on, trusts in, and puts his confidence in the Lord is safe and set on high.*

How to get the person to **CO-OPERATE** with you.

The greatest part of deliverance is **teaching**.

- (1) Ensure that the person **understands** what you are doing.
- (2) **The truth is the basis of deliverance - John 8:32.** Teach and explain so that the person can co-operate with you and then there will be **fewer manifestations**, if any. Manifestations can be very frightening to the person, because he identifies himself with the actions of the demon - he feels ashamed and embarrassed.
- (3) When the person has to renounce (confession) things, **let him pray himself** - do not lead the prayer. It lets the person concentrate on what he/she is doing — he/she makes a decision of the **will**. It does not matter how long they take - be patient!! **NB: Pray through Prayers of Renunciation**
- (4) Focus only on that which they can understand and receive - some cases are so complicated that **more than one session** will be needed. Do not try to solve everything at once.
- (5) They must **take responsibility for their own choices and decisions** - you are not a crutch! You cannot resist the enemy for someone else - he must. They **must** and **can** read the Bible.
- (6) **Renewal of the mind is the key** - it strengthens your **will** - then he can resist. Your will is strengthened to the extent that your **mind receives the truth** - then you can resist the enemy. **Faith cannot function if the will is not strong enough.** Hold fast to the Word of God in FAITH.
- (7) Teach the person to write his / her own **petitions**. This form of prayer is very powerful and helps to discipline the person in taking up responsibility for his / her own battles. (See teaching on Petitions available from Kanaan Ministries)

Many people have been hurt through deliverance workers who did not understand what they were doing. If you are working with a person who has experienced hurt, then stand in the gap and ask forgiveness on behalf of the workers that had wounded them.

Please remember that demons can really hurt a person. There have been reports of demons tearing the insides of people and actually causing bleeding.

Demons have also manifested so strongly through people that they were thrown on the floor and bashed around which can also cause physical wounds. Not forgetting also the emotional scars that go with such a traumatic experience.



If you allow a demon to manifest through a person, you are now causing that person to be a medium/channeler. The Bible warns us that we must not allow an evil spirit to manifest through us.

If the demons do start manifesting, stop the prayer immediately and call them back out of the trans-like state and then you let them work with you with their **WILL**, close the doors by leading them in repentance and then the demons **have** to flee.

It can also happen that while the person is trying to repent and confess of sins, that the demon locks their mouth or makes the tongue thick and heavy in the mouth or locks the jaws, etc.. Help them, by praying aloud on behalf of them, looking them in the eye and getting them to pray after you in their minds, in agreement with you until the demon releases them to be able to speak.

Again, it is important that the person must be actively working with you and in agreement with the Holy Spirit.

Chapter 3:

Practical
Deliverance
and Ministry

Things that have to be **DISCERNED** during counselling.

- ➔ **WHERE** did the person give ground to the enemy? God gave man the ability to **resist**. Nothing can be done to you without **your permission**, e.g. sin (see J2F materials on the Will).
- ➔ **HOW MUCH** ground was given to the enemy, e.g. many years of not resisting; unbiblical lifestyle; unbiblical standards in marriage; wrong habits, etc.. A lot of teaching will be required.

If the enemy has legal right to be there, it will be difficult to expel him. There is no quick fix.

- ➔ **HOW OPEN** is the person to receive? E.g. if the person has just been saved, first minister to the occult root area, bloodline curses, occult objects, etc..

True repentance is important. Also deal with the deliverance from drugs, alcohol, sexual lust, etc.. E.g. living together before marriage - explain marriage, etc..

- ➔ How much deliverance can the person **MAINTAIN**? E.g. if the couple is living together or in a marriage with wrong foundations, jealousy, selfishness and wrong actions deliverance only will not be enough. **If the person carries hatred and anger, he will not maintain his deliverance.** He must first be freed in order to go back to that relationship and walk in **forgiveness**. **A lot of teaching is required — don't just chase demons!**

Break the patterns of wrongful behaviour against each other that they have performed for years, e.g. run to the bottle every time there is a crisis. Don't fall back into sin or try to escape every time you become angry! [Alcohol can be a way of escape.] **Teach the person about open doors**, e.g. smoking, drinking, etc..

People want you to pray for them to change their **thought patterns** in order to **stop a sinful habit**. Remember the **WILL** of man! Be on guard against **secret sins** that the person does not want to confess and stop doing, e.g. the person confesses smoking cigarettes, but not dope. **This secret sin is a bondage that draws the person back into sin again.**

BALANCE in the deliverance ministry:

INDIVIDUAL'S
responsibility ...

AND

Strategy of the ENEMY
against the individual
(behavioural patterns that
control the person).

(1) Repentant conversion (David vs. Saul)

Accept responsibility for **what you are** and for **what you have done**, e.g. hit your wife, alcoholic, etc..

Where did you open the door?

Through true repentance the heart of man is prepared for ministry. The doors are closed through **renouncing** and **true repentance**.

Justification	Deliverance
Wishes he had done better.	Accepts the truth when confronted.
Feels sorry for what he had done.	Focuses on wounded one and GOD.
Has a “good reason” for disobedience.	Makes no excuses - accepts full responsibility.
Wants to avoid painful consequences.	Willing to face consequences of sin.
Only obedient when convenient.	Willing to change 180 degrees.
Manipulation for self-gain, commands.	Unwilling to compromise: sticks to GOD’s Commands.

(2) Self-discipline must be acquired.

(3) Crucifixion of the flesh.

Hate your sin to be freed.

(4) Forgiveness.

Relationships must be restored.

PRACTICAL deliverance.

1. Counsel the person and give teaching. Let Light and Truth come forth. Discern the strategy of the enemy (teaching from J2F).

John 8:32 And you will know the truth and the truth will make you free (progressively).

Many are freed just by hearing the truth.

2. Now pray with the person. **Know you are equipped.** Just trust the Holy Spirit for discernment, anointing and power - you must simply be willing. **He that is in you is greater and stronger than he that is in the world!** Don’t run when the manifestations start!

3. **Make sure that the person is part of a fellowship so that he can be established and encouraged.** Home cells, Bible studies, etc.. are very important. **Just after deliverance a person is very vulnerable** almost like the inside of an egg that has been blown out. **Now the Word must be replaced. Do not concentrate on attacks from outside, your feelings, emotions, etc..** Just focus on taking in the Word!

The DIFFERENCE between OPPRESSION and demonic POSSESSION.

According to **James 4:7** every one of us has the ability to resist, but many do not know it and also do not know how to resist. Man is afraid - fear is the work of the enemy. Faith brings God's power into action.

James 4:7 "7 So be subject to God. Resist the devil [stand firm against him], and he will flee from you."

How do you resist?

Speak the Word - fight back!! Every time an attack comes you **MUST resist**, e.g. **fear** in an airplane, outbursts of anger, impure thoughts that lead to masturbation, etc.. Refuse it and use the Word of God as a sword.

When the attacks come again and again and you do not resist in that specific area, it becomes an oppression.

(1) Oppression

Most of the Christians who come to you for deliverance, experience oppression in certain areas. **They cannot offer resistance.** You must pray for them to be loosed from that oppression. **YOU MUST BE CLEAN!!**

In reality you resist on their behalf. You **step in** between the person and the devil and take authority over the works of the enemy. It feels like a train going over you! You bind and rebuke the evil spirit and command it to let go of his grip on that person. It is like a heavy, oppressive cloud around the person that does not only influence, but also has the ability to force and drive that person. The person **MUST** confess and renounce all agreements made with the enemy for the counsellor to have a platform to work from.

Bind and rebuke this 'cloud' and command that its hold be broken and that it must go. **After you have bound and rebuked, you must loose the positive things of the Lord**, e.g. where there was fear, declare **2 Timothy 1:7** - love, power and a sound mind.

There can also be **manifestations because the oppression on the person**, even though it comes from the outside, is so heavy upon him, that he feels obliged to do what the evil spirit commands him to do. **When there has been no resistance over a period of time, the oppression of the evil one takes control.** You, as counsellor, must know your authority and power in Jesus Christ and **command all manifestations to stop in the Name of Jesus.**

Do not allow the demon to throw the person around. God is a God of order - He will not belittle His children (see section on parameters to set when dealing with the demonic, later in this chapter).

At the beginning of your ministry you will find that there will be a lot of **resistance** from the enemy - he tests your authority and challenges you. If you stand steadfast in Jesus Christ, future deliverances will be easier. E.g., storm on the Sea of Galilee when Jesus had to cross over to the other side, the demon-possessed man from Gaderene was there. Satan tried to stop Jesus from setting the man free and stirred up the water spirits and the spirits of the air and caused a storm. Satan will try to stop you through persecution, tongues, lies, your boss, etc..

Do not run!! Stay and be a SON — not an orphan!!

- **ILLUSTRATION OF OPPRESSION**

The person may at first be aware of “someone shooting”, and try to resist ... but then becomes too **TIRED** to keep on fighting back. As such, the enemy attacks full force.



(2) Demonic Possession

If no resistance is offered while the enemy attacks continuously, then he ends up on your territory and erects his strongholds, e.g. FEAR that is not resisted will end in all kinds of sickly fears (phobias). Then there is a spirit of fear occupying the person. You can't just pray a prayer of loosening - the spirit must be driven out.

Remember, when an evil spirit manifests, it is as a result of the anointing of the Holy Spirit. Look at the life of Jesus. A manifestation takes place when the enemy makes known his presence. He is forced by the anointing to come into the Light and identify himself. He trembles in fear of the anointing. Remember, he wants to remain in darkness and continue with his work in darkness.

- **ILLUSTRATION OF POSSESSION**

The enemy experiences NO resistance - and moves in to possess the land.



- **ILLUSTRATION OF SPIRITUAL WARFARE**

At first sign of the enemy, the person responds offensively in spiritual warfare ...



What do you see during a demonic MANIFESTATION?

Beware of formulas/recipes.

1. It will **scream** fearfully — uncontrollably - not a human scream. Beware of the flesh!
2. **Eyes** - wide open and wild; a lot of white around the iris of the eye. You see something other than the person in the eyes that look at you.
3. Sometimes there is an **attitude of attack** - it looks as if the enemy wants to attack you. **Never close your eyes!** The enemy cannot touch a believer who walks under the protection of God. **Faith in God builds a wall around you.**
4. A person who is demonically controlled cannot look the believer in the eye. It seems to him as if two large **streams of light** are streaming from the believer's eyes that **burn** into his eyes. The believer's face is brightly lit, which blinds the demon. His power diminishes as he looks you in the face. He will try to close his eyes, but force him to keep them open. Beware of **psychic power — do not take on a power competition.**
5. **Foam** at the mouth; distorted face and body; looks like epileptic fits.
6. A demon can cause the person to **run away from you**. Chase the person! The demon can talk to you — **never talk back.**
7. The demon can **pretend to be gone** or to be **slain in the Spirit** to prevent the person from being prayed for. Be alert!
8. **Uncontrollably screams with laughter:** Demon tries to make you feel like a fool and wants you to withdraw; wants you to **lose confidence in yourself and in the Lord**; wants you to call in someone else's help. NB: If you lose this one, the next one will be more difficult until you become afraid to pray again. Remain standing and keep on commanding in the Name of Jesus - you will be victorious!
9. Just before the demon leaves, it begins to **cry mournfully**. Only then it leaves the person.

****NOTE!**** The above-mentioned are possible manifestations - there is no pattern.

What does the COUNSELLOR do?

1. Make sure that it is a demon and not **pretense of the flesh**.
2. **Do not battle with the demon in a physical wrestle with the person.** Use Jesus as your model - He expelled demons with His Word. Do not lay on hands unless God tells you to — transference can take place. Ask permission to touch the person. **Where two or more persons do deliverance, only ONE gives commands while the others support.** Take turns to lead. (It works like the army. There's one in command, and the others support.)

3. Use your **eyes** and your **voice** with authority. Talk **firmly** and **clearly**; you don't need to shout.
4. You must **forbid the enemy to cause chaos**. **Forbid any manifestations and torture**. Often the enemy tries to **choke** a person. **Remember that God loves the person**. You are ministering in His Name, in His Power, with His Word and under His Blood. **You must practice control on behalf of the person, as Jesus Himself would have done it. Never pray with your eyes closed.**
5. Discern when you are talking to the **person** and when you are rebuking the **enemy**. Use a **firm tone** of voice and commands when talking to the enemy; softer tone of voice when speaking to the person. Get the person to co-operate with you and to command the demon to go. It brings the person's will on God's side. Teach them to resist and do warfare.
6. Talk to the enemy only by **commanding**.
7. Command **silence** and forbid the enemy to **hurt** or **control** the person. Do not open up for spiritism.
8. It is **not necessary** to address the demon by his **name**, except if God gives it clearly. Otherwise rebuke an **unclean spirit**. Jesus spoke to unclean spirits only when He commanded them to go.
9. **Ask God for strengthening by angels.**

PARAMETERS to set when dealing with the DEMONIC:

I hereby command all demonic spirits present that you will all obey the following commands which I give you in the Name and Authority of the True Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth.

- You will not manifest in any way outside of what the Lord Jesus Christ allows you.
- You will not manifest in any shape or form other than your true form.
- You will not manifest physically through this person's body in any way, nor will you bring any physical pain.
- You will not hinder this ministry process in any way nor bring blackness or confusion
- You will not speak to any parts³ (inner identities) nor will you hinder any parts from seeing or hearing the true Lord Jesus.
- You will not hide memories nor will you hinder the flow of memory in any way.
- You will not speak to me.
- You will not manifest as Jesus in form nor in speech.

These commands will remain in force from this day forward. If any one of you choose to disobey any one of these commands, then you will have chosen **willfully** to defy the authority of the True Lord Jesus Christ and He will deal with you.

³ For more info, see section on parts and deliverance in the mind-control information.

- **Do not use demons to try to gain insight into spiritual issues.** To engage in lengthy conversations with demons is dangerous territory and can be traumatic to the client. The demons themselves often want you to enter into dialogue with them since they are experts at deception, intimidation and manipulation.

****NOTE!!**** It is important to also discern when a demon is speaking or when inner parts are speaking — please see teachings on SRA/Mind control, which will be covered later on in this course.

- **Only focus on the demonic if they interfere so much that you are unable to proceed effectively with ministry, otherwise ignore them and focus on the healing ministry.** When demons do continue to interfere and prevent you from getting to the memories or roots, then ask Jesus to tell them what to do and where to go, e.g. *"Lord Jesus, would you please tell these demons what to do and where to go". If manifestations continue, then I command every demon that has violated these commands to now be grouped together as one. All of you will now come out without manifestation and you will go where Jesus sends you."*
- If manifestations still continue then it is either another demon or group of demons, or it is possibly not demonic. It could be a dissociated part.

Demons can only be cast out if the client is in agreement. Ask the client's permission: "I now agree with all my humanity that I resist the devil and all his demons — Father Your Word says that he now will HAVE to flee!"

- Demons can inflict bodily pain. Headaches are very common. Often this bodily pain is memory-based, i.e. due to the physical pain, which was inflicted upon the person in a previous trauma event.
- Demons can hold/hide memories or pieces of memories. They cannot take these pieces with them when cast out.
- Never answer a demon's questions, nor engage in conversation around a demon's comments or statements.
- Always remember that demons are not the source of the client's problems. Our focus is on getting to the root memory events, not on casting out demons. However, in your quest to get to these root memories, you may have to deal with the demonic.
- Demons are slaves of Christ.
- Demons will manifest in many different ways
- Demons can also have open doors through parents' sin, curses, blood ties and spirit and soul ties, as well as emotional pain and trauma.
- Always speak gently and politely to demons because you may be dealing with a dissociated part (inner identity). Demons respond to the authority of Jesus Christ, not to your own charisma or aggression.

Chapter 4:

Practical
Suggestions for
Deliverance
Ministry

The ministry of deliverance must form part of the **five-fold ministry**. Do not specialise — it is unbalanced! If you are fascinated with manifestations of demons, looking for sensation, inquisitive, excitement, etc.. — BEWARE!!

HOW do you know that you are CALLED?

1. Do you have **empathy** with the oppressed and do you desire to see them set **free**? Your **motivation** must be love.
2. Do you experience **regular contact** with those who are bound by the enemy? You do not have to advertise and you do not go out looking for them - God sends them across your path.

Balance.

3. Minister in **all areas** of the commission of **Matthew 28** and **Mark 16**. Do not specialize in deliverance. **Luke 24**.
4. You must give them **teaching**. Use the Word of God and explain how they have fallen into that state, how the enemy works, principles of deliverance and how to remain free (covered in J2F/J2W).
5. Be careful of becoming so “**demon conscious**” that the deliverance never stops. **Rather let the person return at another time** for more deliverance.
6. Every person must be **established in the Word** and run his **own** race; otherwise he remains a baby Christian. (For every problem encountered, a demon must be cast out!!)
7. To just pray for a person once and to believe that everything will be right then, is also a mistake. The person **must** go to fellowship in an assembly and become part of a home cell or a Bible study group. The counsellor must teach the person and build him up in the Word until he is able to stand on his own.

How to exercise CONTROL in this ministry.

Do not allow the needs of others to control you.

Maintain balance:

OWN time ...

AND

Compassion.

Be strict with your and your family's time.

People with desperate needs do not care about you. They will exhaust you if you allow it. You alone can say no, otherwise you will not last long.

(1) Time

Refuse to be forced to minister. Every case is urgent! Only you know what you can cope with. **Emotional guilt** becomes so big that you will try to minister to everyone.

Refuse to go further than you can handle. Set your own standards and be realistic.

Limit the hours and days that you minister.

Luke 10:19 *"19 Behold! I have given you authority and power to trample upon serpents and scorpions, and [physical and mental strength and ability] over all the power that the enemy [possesses]; and **nothing shall in any way harm you.**"*

This ministry makes demands on you **physically, mentally, emotionally** and **spiritually**. You are always in a war. Watch out for burnout. The people you work with are passive; the demons resist you and they never get tired. They are appointed to drain you (vampire spirits as well as power demons).

(2) People

a. Is the person **ready for deliverance** or does he just want **temporary relief**?

****KEY!**** Sincere remorse — they must be desperate: an eagerness to rid themselves of that which disturbs them - hatred of the sin. Beware of those who are merely looking for a "spiritual Disprin" - just relief, but they are not prepared to change their lifestyles. You're wasting your time with such a case. Normally such people are not willing to go to an assembly or submit to authority.

b. Is the person ready — is it the right season? Does the person only want to be **ministered** to (attention) or does he want a **true, permanent deliverance**? They will tell you: *"Pray just what you feel led to!"*

Does the person have enough **truth** to **maintain deliverance**? Make sure they have enough spiritual, mental, and emotional **capacity** to go through the deliverance and be able to **maintain** their deliverance. Many times a **third party** brings someone for deliverance without them even knowing what deliverance is.

(3) Self

PRIORITIES:

- The Lord.
- Marriage and family.
- Your own time of rest and relaxation or exercise.
- Ministry.

Try not to minister in your home — this is just wisdom to protect your family life. Do not allow people to move in and live with you. Don't feel guilty to spend time with your family.

Be careful that people do not put you on a pedestal. You must lead them to maturity in the Lord. Lead them to a place where they trust in the Word of God - not in you. They must run to prayer - not to you. You only help them to deal with their roots of rejection, rebellion, and so forth.

Your personal life requires discipline:

- **Prayer, fasting, the Word.**

To fast makes you alert in the spirit dimension. The Word keeps you in constant contact with God. (If your body won't listen to you to fast, how will the devil listen to you?)

- You must be pure (holy) - authority and power come from a pure life before God.



****NUGGET!**** Michael Harper (during warfare): "The one who is free to move unhindered in enemy territory, is the one who has a **passionate hatred of evil, and a passionate love of righteousness.**"

- You must be a person of your word. Mean what you say. Your own word must be trusted.

2 Corinthians 7:1 (Pure Heart) *"Therefore, since these [great] promises are ours, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from everything that contaminates and defiles body and spirit, and bring [our] consecration to completeness in the [reverential] fear of God."*

- Self-control.

1 Corinthians 9:27 *"27 But [like a boxer] I buffet my body [handle it roughly, discipline it by hardships] and subdue it, for fear that after proclaiming to others the Gospel and things pertaining to it, I myself should become unfit [not stand the test, be unapproved and rejected as a counterfeit]."*

(Self-control — keep your appointments; pay your bills; satan knows when you don't keep your word — then authority means nothing).

Compassion and empathy.

You must have the **love** and **compassion** of God. It comes from God spontaneously once you flow in this ministry. Don't be shocked or repulsed about the things people did. (**Never** show any facial expressions of shock or disgust.) Handle every discussion in the **utmost confidence**.

The anointing upon your life will cause people to **confide** in you about matters that they have never spoken of before.

Let them **know** that you **believe** in them. It encourages them to be willing to try. God invested everything He had in every person in order for it to be possible for everyone to live victoriously, no matter what they look like when they call on you for help. Believe in God to carry them through. Your testimony can encourage people.

Do not allow the person to lean on you; teach them to lean on Jesus.

HOW should you minister?

1. Minister **with someone else**; let **someone be close to you (room next to you)**. Guard against sexual accusations, finances, etc.. E.g. "You said I should get divorced."
2. Let the **Holy Spirit lead you**. Two cases are never the same. Be **sensitive** - go **slowly** - **wait** on the Lord. Be careful of preconceived ideas. There is no recipe.
3. Pray for a **word of knowledge** and **discernment** of spirits (will come through spontaneous thoughts).
4. Ask God to reveal the **roots** to you.
5. Do not be **inquisitive**, especially not with sexual sin.
6. **Do not go further than you understand**. If it is a difficult case, admit it and ask the person if you can extend the appointment.
7. **Do not touch the person** when you pray for them, except when God tells you to. If you do sense the Holy Spirit tells you to lay hands upon the person, or to anoint them with oil, then first ask the person's permission. The person could have been through serious trauma and abuse, and so touching them could be very traumatic to them; they could shut down immediately and will not be able to receive any further ministry.

Transference of spirits can also take place with contact. (Sometimes the counsellor experiences a heavy feeling, irritation, loss of joy, etc.. after a deliverance session — see cleansing/wrapping-up prayer after each deliverance session.)

****VERY IMPORTANT!!**** Cut yourself loose from every person you have ministered to!!

8. **Do not touch occultic items — transference takes place**. Occultic items carries demons. (**Paul** — handkerchiefs / towels / aprons carried anointing.)
9. Important!! Always check ALL jewelry and tattoos!! Belly rings, rings, necklaces, anklets, toe rings. They could have a cord tied around their waist underneath their clothes — (African and Indian cultures.) Tattoos bring a curse — see Leviticus 19:28 (see also section on this in J2F6).
10. Always be in control. (That is, after submitting totally to the Holy Spirit of course!)

The ANOINTING.

Believe that God has anointed you. At first you will feel scared and insecure. You will experience the anointing by **liberty**, **boldness** and **understanding** that qualifies you for service.

As you make yourself available for God's work, two things will increase:

- Your anointing.
- Your authority.

After each deliverance session, your anointing AND authority will increase.

Do's and DONT'S.

1. **Do not read books on how to minister deliverance.** Every case is unique. There is no such thing as a textbook.
2. Do not **memorize** lists of demons, groupings, strongholds, etc..
3. Believe that God will give you **discernment** - minister in the Holy Spirit.
4. Do not be **dependent upon manifestations**. It happens by faith!
5. Do not **quickly lay on hands**.
6. You must take **authority** — don't let satan be in control.

Chapter 5:
Prenatal
Wounds and
Sin

(Excerpts of this chapter have been taken from "Basic School for the Ministry of Christian Counselling", Elijah House. Personal additions/changes also made.)

Let's suppose we exist in heaven before we are born ... one day, Jesus asks for volunteers to go to earth. How would **you** respond?

If you had your choice, would you choose:

- This century?
- Your place and date of birth?
- Your own father and mother?
- Your own gender?
- Your own body, face, mind, personality?

Would you, if God gave you the choice, go straight to Heaven ... or all the way through life.

Negative answers identify:

- Lack of freedom to be yourself.
- Deep wounds and guilt.
- Rebellion and anger against God.

Psalm 22:9-10 *Yet You have brought me out of the womb; **You made me trust in You even at my mother's breast.** From birth I was cast upon You; from my mother's womb You have been my God.*

As we mature, we interpret our past experiences with our minds, but we must remember that, even before the development of our intellect or reasoning abilities, we had a spirit within us.

While we were being formed in the womb, we were very sensitive to the world surrounding us. Thus it was possible for us to receive wounds as well as to show a sinful reaction to those wounds.

Psalm 58:3

Isaiah 48:8

Psalm 51:5-6

Luke 1:41, 44

According to the Scriptures, pregnant mothers spent the **first three months** of their pregnancy in a very quiet manner, praying and meditating and singing psalms to the Lord.

Luke 1:24, 56 *Now after this his wife Elizabeth became pregnant, and **for five months she secluded herself entirely** ... and Mary remained with her (Elizabeth) **for about three months** and then returned to her own home.*

Little babies are very sensitive to the reactions, emotions, experiences, etc.. of their parents (such as fear, rape, rejection, quarrelling, etc..). Sound also has a great impact on the unborn (eardrums are the first to develop).

Trauma during the time of birth, as is the case with breech babies, blue babies, inductions, Caesareans, etc.. has a tremendous effect on the baby.

It is part of the healing process to give names to miscarried and aborted babies and also to give funerals. It is necessary to go through the grieving process. It can manifest in strange **dreams** or **behavioural patterns** from childhood right through to adulthood.

Suicidal attempts in children or teenagers could be traced back to an attempted abortion by the mother.

- **FOUR VERY COMMON PRENATAL EXPERIENCES**

1. Illegitimacy.
2. Being born “at the wrong time” for the family.
3. “Wrong” gender.
4. Being an adopted child.



SEXUAL wounds.

(1) Prenatal

- Sex during pregnancy can have a very negative influence when being done in sin, lust or violence.
- An abnormal fear for the male organ or similar looking objects.
- “Sex is unclean.”
- A spirit of lust can be transferred.

(2) Infancy

- Discovers genitals and parent overreacts.
- Believes the body is dirty.
- Both fascinated and repulsed by sexual things — feels only the negative.
- Mom and Dad: Do not handle the baby roughly or with irritation — he/she might think the sexual parts are unclean and might also anticipate pain.

The child conceived OUT of WEDLOCK.

Experiences feelings of **shame**, **fear**, **insecurity**, etc.. The symptoms being:

(A) A death wish.

The child feels that he/she should never have been there. This could result in:

- Accident proneness.
- Many childhood diseases.
- A constant feeling of wanting to die.

(B) Performance orientation.

"I must work to earn the right to be loved and to be here."

- Feels he/she must win.
- Needs compliments.
- Defensive.
- Insecure.

(C) Anger.

Towards parents for their sin and because they have to work so hard to earn the right to live.

(D) Shame *(it is like a mantle that one wears).*

Experiences the guilt and shame of the parents, as well as their own because they perceive themselves to be the "problem".

The child born at the "WRONG TIME"

The family experiences tough times such as:

- Economic depression, loss of income.
- Poor health, especially of the mother.
- Absent father.
- Parents recently lost a child; miscarriages (the womb becomes a graveyard — need to break the curse); after the death of a little brother/sister the surviving child experiences deep grief as well as the sense of being "second best"; *"I am taking the place of someone else"*.

Fruit/Symptoms:

(A) Death wish.

(B) Performance orientation along with feelings of being **utterly worthless**.

(C) **Guilt** - especially if the pregnancy endangered the health of the mother. Also a financial burden.

(D) **A feeling that there will never be enough:**

- Money - fear to spend money (especially on self).
- Love - especially when being born into large families.

(E) **Does not feel welcome** - always hiding OR becomes aggressive and enforces his rights.

(F) **Extreme anger** - "replacement child".

The child born the "WRONG SEX".

Fruit/Symptoms:

(A) **Death wish.**

(B) **Performance orientation** - *"I can never please them."*

(C) **Rebellion** - *"Why should I even try?"*

(D) **Confusion** - especially in terms of sex - "tomboys" ("sexual poles" are changed around).

(E) **Shame** - towards their own sex - *"I was a mistake."*

(F) **Detached, extremely private, secretive** - fear of people, fear of open spaces, etc..

The ADOPTED CHILD.

Fruit/Symptoms:

(A) **Death wish, performance orientation, anger.**

(B) **Fear of rejection** - baby either wants too much love OR totally rejects love.

(C) **Pathological lies** - they have been lied to and have judged their parents.

(D) **Kleptomania** - they were stolen from.

(E) **Identity crisis** - *"Who am I?"*

OTHER examples of prenatal experiences and their FRUITS.

ROOT	FRUIT AFTER BIRTH
1. Child not wanted.	• Performance orientated. • Apologizing. • Wishing death. • Refusing affection. • Craving affection. • Frequent illness. • Problems with bonding. • Trying to earn right to be.
2. Parents face bad time financially.	• Believing I am a burden.
3. Mother - fear of delivery.	• Fear. • Insecurity. • Fear of child-birth.
4. Child is the wrong sex according to the parents.	• Sexual identity problems. • Striving to please. • Defeatist attitude — “I was wrong from the beginning”.
5. Conceived out of marriage/before parents were ready.	• Deep sense of shame. • Lack of belonging. • I’m a burden.
6. Next child after miscarriage/abortion.	• Trying to make up for the loss (not being “me”). • Striving / over-serious. • Anger at being a replacement.
7. Mother loses loved one while pregnant.	• Deep sadness. • Depression. • Death wish. • Loneliness.
8. Mother heavy smoker, drinker (alcohol).	• Severe anxiety. • Chemical damage. • Negative attitudes. • Low activity level.
9. Fighting in home.	• Nervousness. • Uptight/fear. • Feel guilty when in conflict. • Taking emotional responsibility for parents.

ROOT	FRUIT AFTER BIRTH
10. Father dies/leaves home.	• Guilt. • Self-blame. • Anger. • Expecting to be abandoned. • Death wish. • Depression. • Craving to find substitute.
11. Violent/unwholesome sex, more than one partner.	• Aversion to sex. • Fear of male organ. • Unhealthy sexual attitude.
12. Induced labour.	• Bonding problems. • Masochistic personality. • Sexual perversion.
13. Unusual painful delivery.	• Unacceptable expressed anger. • Depression.
14. Cord around neck.	• Throat related problems. • Problems with swallowing. • Speech impediments. • Anti-social/criminal behaviour.
15. Mother is afraid of gaining too much weight/does not eat properly.	• Insatiable hunger. • Anger.
16. Breach delivery.	• Higher risk of having learning problems.
17. Mother has poor health.	• Guilt. • Child takes emotional responsibility for Mother.
18. C-Section.	• Craving all kinds of physical contact. • Trouble with concept of space. • Clumsiness.

Example of a PRAYER:

Lord Jesus, we ask You to identify with _____ at the time of her being a little baby being formed in the womb. Speak to her spirit and communicate to this little one that You knew about all the circumstances surrounding his/her birth. You have planned him/her, Father, and were excited when she was born. Let _____ know that he/she was not a mistake, a burden or an accident, but a gift and a joy.

Lord, we ask for Your power to be able to forgive. In our own strength we cannot forgive. (Forgive parents, confess anger, ask forgiveness for judgements).

Lord, we ask You to take away the shame of illegitimacy.

Take away the shame of being of the "wrong sex".

Remove the burden of guilt because of him/her being born at the wrong time, him/her being the cause of her mother's health problems, and for being a financial burden.

Take away these negative feelings and minister to the wounds and anger and feelings of being unwelcome, the fear that there would not be enough time, money or food. We ask You to cancel the death wish, accident proneness and performance orientation which have developed from a need to earn acceptance.

Take away any confusion regarding his/her sexuality - the secrecy, deception and isolation which it has caused.

Father, minister in the area of rejection because of being adopted, the betrayal of parental trust, the wounds caused by the lies and that of which she has been robbed.

Lord, cleanse _____'s heart of any unconscious or hidden grudges. Let _____ know that You have given him/her a very special place in Your family.

Jesus, take away any sense of worthlessness. Communicate to his/her spirit that You are proud of him/her. Restore his/her masculinity/femininity. Let _____ know that You rejoice in his/her masculinity/femininity. Without his/her masculinity/ femininity he/she cannot truly live life the way You created and intended for him/her to live.

Pour Your healing balm over the wounds caused by critical and teasing words. Minister to the wounds caused by having to believe lies as well as the wounds of being robbed.

Restore the birth-right and inheritance which You have planned for him/her right from the start.

Cancel the lies which he/she has believed about him/herself and instil into him/her the truth of his/her identity in You.

Break the agreements made with the enemy.

Thank you, Father!

Prenatal INFLUENCES.

Read the following: *The Secret Life of the Unborn Child*, Thomas Verny, M.D. ISBN 0-440-50565-8, 1981 (from which the material below was taken).

This chapter is included because of the possible doors than can be opened in the spirit of an unborn child. I think you will find it quite enlightening. While "He" is used in the following summary, please read he/she.

Dr. Verny reports on many research studies relating to this issue. While Dr. Verny doesn't suggest he is a Christian, or that the book was written from a Christian perspective, it still contains much valuable information about how doors can be opened before birth, during birth, and a a young child.

The following are highlights that Dr. Verny found from his research.

- Remembers music played only during pregnancy.
- Remembers language spoken by mother three months before birth.
- Can sense and react to emotions such as love/hate.
- Can be taught conditioned learned responses.
- Becomes emotionally agitated each time his mother even thinks of having a cigarette.
- Hears clearly after six months, knows voice of father and mother.
- Fetal activity (kicking and moving) comes as a result of mom's anxiety.
- Womb anxiety produces children with anxiety.
- Child knows if father is physically or emotionally abusing wife/mom.
- Luke 1:44 "For low as soon as the voice of thy salvation sounded in my ears, the babe in my womb leaped for joy."
- By week 5, He is developing an amazingly complex repertoire of reflex actions.
- By week 8, He is not only moving his head, arm and trunk easily, he has already fashioned the movement into a primitive body language expressing his likes and dislikes with well placed jerks and kicks.
- Push, poke or pinch a mother's stomach and her 2.5 month old fetus will quickly squirm away.
- From week 26, he listens all the time.
- He has distinct musical likes and dislikes.
- He will jump in rhythm to the beat of a drum.
- Responds and moves body to music and rhythm.
- Music causes them to be anxious or relaxed, depending upon the kind.
- Remembers music his mom played or sang.
- He can see light after week 16.
- He can tell when light is shined upon his mothers stomach.
- Has memory after 6th month.
- Reacts to long temporary personal stress of the mother.
- Mother's attitude toward baby is the single greatest effect on how an infant turns out:
 - Easiest pregnancy.
 - Most trouble free birth.
 - Healthiest off spring, physically and emotionally.

- Bad marriage or relationship are among the greatest causes of emotional and physical damage in the womb. 37% greater risk.
- Family stress or threats to the husband causes babies to be more emotionally volatile. Predisposes baby to psychological disorders such as anxiety or depression.
- Rates of psychiatric disorders, particularly schizophrenia were markedly higher among babies whose fathers died before children were born.
- Unhappy and rejected babies have unusually large numbers of physical and behavioural problems.
- Unborn babies take on the sleep time and cycles of their mothers. This continues after birth as well.
- Newborns may refuse to nurse if their mothers have rejected them, or didn't want them, or wanted an abortion.
- Fear/distress in the mother will result in immediate wild kicking of the fetus.
- Major catastrophes such as home loss or death of a loved one can deplete the mother of her emotional reserves so that she is unable to extend herself emotionally to her unborn child. This rejection is naturally felt by the baby.
- Increased fetal licking ten fold at death of father in car accident. Babies were born underweight and colicky, cranky, irritable and cried a lot.
- They can hear and react to loud noises.
- They know the voice of their mother and father. Mother is driven from a rock concert by violent kicking.
- Emotions such as anger, anxiety and fear will prompt immediate furious kicking.
- A fraction of a second after fear sets mother's heart racing, infants rate will double.
- Fear of responsibility and fear of bearing a defective child raise the chances substantially of a spontaneous abortion.
- More a mother drinks the greater her child's chances of being born mentally retarded, hyperactive with heart murmur or with facial deformity.
- Babies whose mothers smoked 40 or more cigarettes per day were born smaller and in poorer physical condition. More reading problems at age 7, more psychological disorders.
- Caffeine can cause loss of muscle tone and low activity levels.
- How he is born whether painful or easy, smooth or violent, largely determines who he becomes and how he will view the world around him. Whether he is 10, 40 or 70. A part of him always looks out at the world through the eyes of the newly born child he once was.
- Their minds record how they were delivered, how their head and shoulders were turned and the way they delivered.
- Psychological birth risks:
 - At bottom — uncomplicated vaginal births, confers important emotional advantages.
 - Caesarean birth — crave physical contact.
 - Breach births — more academic problems in life.

- Umbilical cord difficulties — high rate of throat related problems.
- Premature birth — feel pushed and hurried, bad dreams and nightmares correlating with the problem of birth.
- Life threatening experiences, i. e. two months premature, use of drugs, forceps, fetal monitors other “emergency measures”, predisposes child to a wide range of injury and problems later. Results in much higher incidents of schizophrenia, psychosis, violent anti social and criminal behaviour.
- Recollection by a person of their birth: “I could feel her terror when the knife began cutting across her stomach”; “I felt Mom withdraw into a protective ball because of fear. I became scared because I have to do it all by myself” (the birth process) .
- Troubled moms have more complications in child birth:
 - Prolonged labour.
 - Poor attitude toward mother hood.
 - Poor relationship to mother.
 - Habitual anxieties, worries and fears.
- Quick bonding at birth results in more happy and well adjusted children.
- Babies that require force on head or neck to be born, refuse head and neck ware through life.
- Induced labour correlates with sexual sadism.
- Women who relate poorly to their mothers raise the risk of problem pregnancies and child birth:
 - Anxiety filled fearful women.
 - Have problem bonding.
 - Higher birth complications.
 - Longest labours.
 - Most forceps, attempted deliveries.
 - Bore babies with lowest AGPA scores.
- Stroking, hugging, bonding as little as an hour after birth makes a critical different. It creates better mothers, and healthier babies physically emotionally and intellectually.
 - Children 4 years old had 15 points higher IQ if they had been stroked at and after birth.
- By 8th week, the baby scratches its nose, sucks its thumb, raises his head and reaches out.
- They have individual; and unique brain waves as early as 5th week.

Everything a mother thinks, feels, says or hopes influences her unborn child.

Also read Chapter 8, pp 137-149 Healing from Conception to Birth, Dearing, Norma, *The Healing Touch*, ISBN 0-8007-9302-1 2002. It has some very good suggestions on healing of the conception to birth experience.

Chapter 6:
Ministry for
Miscarriage and
Abortion

Some may question, "Why are the healings of miscarriages and of abortions included in the same section? One is involuntary and the other is by choice. In both cases, however, a life is lost, typically there is no funeral, and rarely is there emotional closure. There may also be spiritual and emotional connections with the fetus for years after the event, which need to be healed.

(1) Miscarriages

There is no accumulative account tallied of the number of miscarriages released. Even so, death is an intruder in God's plan; He never intended for us to die. The sin of Adam and Eve changed all that.



God certainly does not desire that babies in the womb die, but because we live in an imperfect world riddled with disease, miscarriages occur. The emotional trauma experienced by the mother over the loss of a fetus is compounded by the somewhat insensitive attitude of many fathers, as in the comment, "Let's put this behind us and move on," when the mother is still grieving and in need of closure. However, before the mother can have peace from her loss, she will need to have spiritual and emotional closure of the experience, and she will need to release the baby to Jesus. (This situation is not gender-specific to mothers alone, but we will be using the mother's experience for the sake of explanation.)

Most often, an unborn baby does not have a burial (or a committal or memorial service) and the mother often has not encountered closure of the experience or released the baby to the Lord. Without this closure and release, the law of binding and loosing comes into effect: the mother is bound on earth and the baby is bound in Heaven.

For the sake of the mother's peace, inner healing is usually required. The mother may blame herself, feeling that she contributed to the miscarriage because of poor health practices or because she is unsure whether or not she could have done something to prevent it. The thought that she could have prevented it may be a lie from the adversary that the mother has accepted and chosen to believe. Fear that the mother won't be able to conceive again or other similar issues (pain of separation or unfinished grieving and, therefore, a tie to the unborn child) may formulate. In addition to these possibilities, the spirit of death may enter through the experience of miscarriage.

PRAYER for miscarriages.

(The intercessor should follow these steps. In most cases the mother did not sin, so there is no need for repentance.)

1. Bring the experience before the Lord.

2. Pray that the mother may see the child with Jesus (sometimes the Lord will reveal the sex of the child).
3. Ask the mother if she is ready to release the child to Jesus.
4. Pray a prayer of committal for release (that the mother frees her spirit and soul tie to the child and she also releases the child to Jesus, committing the baby to Him for whatever good purposes He has for the child).
5. Pray the Lord bring peace between mother and child.
6. Pray for healing of any guilt involved.
7. Sometimes the Lord will reveal the name of the child; if not, have the mother name the child.
8. Pray a blessing upon the mother and upon the child.
9. Pray that what is loosed on earth is loosed in Heaven (Matthew 16:19).
10. During the prayer, the grief may come out as either anger or deep hurt, and there may be much sobbing, which is part of the process of release.

(2) Abortion

Sadly enough, it is estimated that more than 50% of pregnancies in most countries in the world end in abortion. Regardless of the circumstances, God considers this the taking of life. Repentance is required for this act. Remember, God forgave King David for taking a life and He will forgive the seeker as well. Within this process, there is almost always a spirit of abortion that needs to be cast out, along with other companion spirits of various sexual sins. One of the results of abortion may be endometriosis (endometrial-like cells appear and flourish in areas outside the uterine cavity, most commonly on the ovaries) because it has to do with the hormonal interruption.



PRAYER for abortion.

(Follow these steps.)

1. Have the seeker pray and confess the sin, repent, and ask God for forgiveness for the sin of murder.
2. Have the seeker confess and repent for the sin of lust. .
3. Pray for the healing of any guilt, shame, fear, and/or confusion that may have existed at the time of the abortion.
4. If necessary, pray that Jesus will come into the experience.

The rest of the prayer is the same as for miscarriages.

5. Pray a prayer of committal for release (that the mother frees her spirit and soul tie to the child and she also releases the child to Jesus, committing the baby for whatever good purposes He has in store for the baby).
6. Pray the Lord bring peace between mother and child.
7. Pray for healing of any guilt involved.
8. Pray that the mother may see the child with Jesus (sometimes the Lord will reveal the sex of the child.).
9. Sometimes the Lord will reveal the name of the child; if not, have the mother name the child.
10. Pray a blessing upon the mother and upon the child.
11. Pray that what is loosed on earth is loosed in Heaven (Matt 16:19)
12. Have both parents pray to forgive themselves. (During this prayer, the grief may come out as either anger or deep hurt, and there may be much sobbing, which is part of the process of release.)
13. Pray a prayer for cleansing.

For prayers for BOTH miscarriage and abortion, see prayers included in J2F6 manual (also available separately as download from the website: "Prayer LOSS OF A BABY").

Chapter 7:

Deliverance
Ministry for
Children

****NOTE!!**** Where there is hurt, there is anger.

It is easier to deliver little children than teenagers and adults.

This teaching is directed at children from conception to 13/14 years of age.

Older teenagers will be ministered to as adults. Here you're also dealing with rebellion, independence, great embarrassment, etc.. Their egos are hurt because the parents want them to receive ministry. You might struggle to get their co-operation.

You also need to do a study on "Receiving the Yoke of the Kingdom."

WHEN is deliverance NECESSARY?

1. **Patterns of failure and oppression** can already start in childhood. They become established and deeply rooted. ***You are not as clever as your brother/sister.*** The enemy lays the wrong foundations, e.g. inferiority, rejection, fear, etc..
2. Problems can be passed down from parent to child (**inherited sins**), e.g. Abraham was God's friend, but he had a problem with lying. This pattern was repeated in his children, Isaac and Jacob.



Children inherit weaknesses from parents. Apart from the inclination to sin there can also be an evil spirit that is linked, e.g. lust. Children that are **conceived in lust** will struggle with a problem of lust that can manifest at an early age.

Other examples of transference from parent to child are:

- Rejection
- Rebellion
- Lies
- Lust
- Fear
- **Mothers can also transfer things to the children before birth:**
 - Rejection
 - Fear
 - Depression
 - Insanity

If the mother had a very difficult pregnancy she can become depressed. With the depression comes a lot of rejection. When the child is born, he has a tendency to depression.

He doesn't want to subject himself to authority and has an attitude of self-pity: "***The whole world is against me.***" The child will also be subject to mood swings, etc.. **Pray for the child and cut him loose from the spirit of the father and mother (*human spirit*).**

In reality you are cutting the child loose from all the disadvantages of the parents' weaknesses and character traits. Join the child to His Heavenly Father and Jesus Christ and loose all the advantages of the Cross, i.e. peace, love, joy, etc.. Also deal with the bloodline curses.

ADOPTED children.

(Four bloodlines: biological parents and adoptive parents.)

Most of these children require ministry. Rejection occurs very strongly as a result of the separation from the natural mother. In the case of an **unmarried mother**, the pressure she experiences during pregnancy is transferred to the child. **Cut children loose from natural parents' weaknesses, sins, etc.. and ask the Lord to join the child to the hearts of the adopted parents** - a spiritual union that usually exists between natural parents and children (see section: "New Life for Your Rejected Child").

Death, divorce, and traumatic events.

Problems might not be obvious immediately, but at a certain stage the child will possibly start **wetting his bed, have outbursts of anger, cling to the parent, be insecure, demand a lot of attention, be aggressive**, etc.. Do not only pray for the problem or the symptoms, but also ask God to show you the root of the problem. Go back to the time when the father left the home and break all oppressions that came into the life of the child at that time.

OCCULT roots.

(Refer to J2F6)

According to Leviticus 20 there is no atonement for idolatry and immorality. It grieves the Holy Spirit and He then withdraws.

Specific symptoms:

- **Learning problems** - confusing thoughts, dyslexia (words are back to front; cannot concentrate and understand; cannot remember and store thoughts; cannot explain himself clearly)
- **Fear and nightmares** (spirit of fear).
- **Rebellion.**

- **Lust** - small children who have an abnormal sexual interest; small child who chronically masturbates (perverse spirit).
- **Anti-social behaviour** and **social disturbances**.

CURSES.

(Deuteronomy 28)

Many are named. Here are a few examples:

- Breaking of **relationships** between parents and children. They are unable to agree.
- **Witchcraft** - domestic servant goes to witchdoctor to make someone sick, bring fear, nightmares; plant things in pot plants, gardens, at gates or entrances, etc..
- **Pendulum** - while mother is pregnant — to determine the baby's gender.
- Any **occult "blessing"** pronounced over the baby, dedication to Satan, a Holy Saint, star signs, etc..
- **Blood covenant** - children do this as a game.
- **Freemasonry** - there is a covenant between the "brothers" due to the different oaths they take. The families are usually bound by **disease**; a pattern of **divorce** will also haunt the families.

Root of REJECTION.

Rejection will occur in the parent and child. Minister to **both** to break the **cycle** of rejection. Cut the root of rejection and when you discern a spirit of rejection, also rebuke it.

Root of REBELLION.



Rebellion in the parent and child can also be a cycle that has to be cut. The **fruit** will be anger, enmity, rejection of submission, etc..

****REMEMBER!!**** At the cutting of roots and oppressions or bondages that are dealt with, there is very little to be seen that takes place or is "felt". The results are only seen later in their lives (Jesus and the fig tree). Real relief takes place after a deliverance from possession.

After you have cut the root, you have to curse and rebuke all the "fruit" produced from this root, e.g. from the root of rejection, you will get self-pity, the inability to communicate, very reserved, and so forth.

- **FRUIT OF REJECTION AND REBELLION**

(See also J2F/J2W)

Rejection	Rebellion
Self-Rejection	Own Will
Fear of Rejection	Selfish
Insecurity	Stubborn
Various Fears	Self-Deception
Sensitivity	Unforgiving
Inferiority	Hatred/Murder
Self-Pity	Clear Past
Self-Conscious/Shy	Suspects Everybody
Jealousy	Retaliation
Envy	Possessive
Fear of Correction	Suspicious
Depression	Blames Others/Projection
Impatience	Anger/Violence
Intolerance	Arrogance
Talkative	Unteachable
Tension	Grudge
Nervous	Fears Confrontation
Loneliness	Judgmental
Suicide	Control Others
Self-Condernation	
Forced Confession	
Lust	
Perversion	
Harlotry	
Perfectionism (Pride)	

Rejection	Rebellion
False Pity	
False Responsibility	
Day Dreaming (Fantasy)	
Frustration	
Egotism	

Sexual abuse.

Here you must cut the children loose from the **spirit** of the person who abused them, as well as from evil spirits of **lust** and **perversity**. Also minister in other areas namely **fear**, **hatred**, **condemnation**, **guilt**, **shame**, etc.. These children become emotionally crippled and Jesus alone can heal them. Teach the child to **forgive**. Statistics have shown that a child abuser will abuse 60 to 70 children in his lifetime.

FEAR and insecurity.

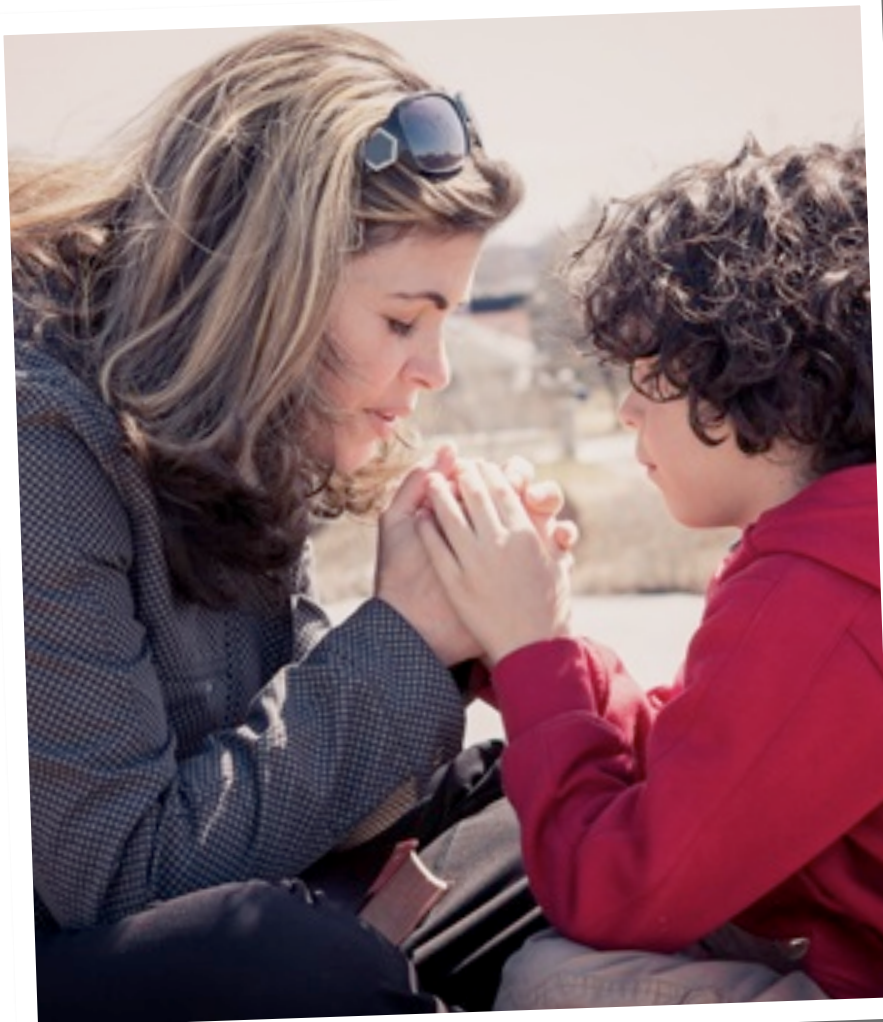
The atmosphere in the house where the child grew up affects him/her. Children can feel fear.

- Parents can transfer fear.
- Grandfathers and grandmothers can also transfer fear. Fear can be communicated and transferred by contact. Parents that often fight cause a fear of divorce.
- Financial fears - fear of poverty and bankruptcy.
- Bad experiences, e.g. a teacher at school that gives cruel treatment.
- Geographical moving - everything familiar has been taken away.
- Toys, films, stories, videos, and so forth.

HOW to minister.

1. If possible, the **parent must be present**. If parents are unsaved or absent, you can still minister to the child with the permission of at least one parent.
2. Let the parents **touch the child** or let the **child sit on the lap of the parent**. Otherwise you have to hold the child — it gives security.
3. If possible, **get all detail about the child from the parent privately**. While you are ministering, talk to the child to build up **communication**.
4. When you pray, be **gentle** and full of **peace**. **Do not pray aggressively** or **shout** and leave the child with an impression of evil.

5. Do not use words such as Satan, devil, demons, etc.. that can scare the child. Use words such as roots, works of darkness, bondages, etc..
6. Be **simple**, **straightforward** and **short** in your prayer.
7. Saved parents can pray over the child **while he sleeps**. Parents confess where they failed, anoint child and ask the Lord to heal on the inside.



New Life for Your Rejected Child

Psalm 10:14 *"...You are the helper of the fatherless."*

Psalm 68:5-6 *"A father of the fatherless ... is God in His Holy Habitation. God sets the solitary in families ..."*

Luke 4:18 *"[Jesus says,] He has sent Me to heal the broken-hearted ..."*

Many new adoptive parents, while well prepared and eager to love and nurture their long awaited child and to provide bountifully for him or her, have not at all comprehended what can be the depth and intensity of the broken-heartedness in that little one. And though they may have good solid faith in the power of the Lord to bless and heal, they can fall short of communicating that love to the spirit of a child so as to effect real healing.

Many parents, natural and adoptive, have come to us saying, "I know that my baby needs affection, and I want to hold him, rock him — but he won't let me. He stiffens in my arms." Or, "My toddler seems to want comfort and love, and will come crying to me, but when I pick her up, she pushes me away."

Or, some report, "This child is insatiable. He has to be held all the time he can never get enough." We hear of older adopted children putting their parents through endless rounds of testing, as though to say, "If I do this, will you still love me?" They will reject before they can be rejected, punish by failure to achieve, or go to the other extreme and strive to please. Yet pleasing, they are never able to come to rest in the affirmations of family and teachers.

They may refuse affection and then project onto parents, who have given consistent unconditional love, the accusation, "You don't love me." Such children may steal items they have no need of simply to get attention, or to express some unidentified sense of having themselves been robbed and their need to retaliate or fill the emptiness. They may lie for no explained reason and to effect no practical purpose.

Parents cry out in desperation, "Where did we go wrong? Maybe we weren't cut out to be parents." They need to know that all such attitudes and behaviour in their adopted children can be summed up as the message in the latter part of Psalm 109:22: "... deliver me, for I am afflicted and needy, and my heart is wounded within me."

Adoptive parents need to realize that their child came to them deeply wounded; they should not interpret the manifestations of that woundedness as conclusive evidence of their failure as parents. This does not mean resignation to painful endurance. The broken-hearted can be healed and the depth of their woundedness can become the strength of their compassion and sensitivity for others.

First there is a need for the adoptive parent to understand something of the origin, nature and functions of a person's personal spirit.

Job 32:8 *"... It is the spirit in a man, the breath of the Almighty, that gives him understanding."*

As we mature we, interpret experiences with our mind; but before we have a developed intellect with which to reason, we have a spirit within us. As soon as we begin to form within the womb, that breath from God which is the core of the essence of us, is breathed into us, or we would not have life at all.

James 2:26 *"... The body without the spirit is dead."*

Ecclesiastes 12:7 *"...The spirit shall return unto God who gave it."*

The spirit, according to the Word of God, is capable of experiencing and expressing many things:

- TROUBLEDNESS (John 13:21).
- DISTRESS (Acts 17:16).
- FEAR (Romans 8:16-17).
- LONGING (Isaiah 26:9).
- Our spirit TESTIFIES (Romans 8:16-17).
- PRAYS (1 Corinthians 14:14).
- SINGS (1 Corinthians 14:15).
- PRAISES (1 Corinthians 14:16).
- TENDS TOWARD ENVY (James 4:5).
- Expresses FAITHFULNESS or UNFAITHFULNESS (Psalm 78:8).
- WORSHIPS (John 4:23).
- In Luke 1:44 as soon as the sound of Elizabeth's greeting reached Mary's ears, the baby (John the Baptist) leaped in his mother's womb for JOY!

Scripture tells us that we sin in our spirit:

- And in whose spirit is no deceit (Psalm 32).
- Create in me a clean heart, O God, and renew a steadfast spirit within me (Psalm 51).
- I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you, and I will remove the heart of stone from your flesh and give you a heart of flesh, and I will put My Spirit within you (Ezekiel 36:26; 11:19; Ephesians 4:17-18).
- Let us cleanse ourselves from all defilement of flesh and spirit (2 Corinthians 7:1, see also Psalm 32:2; Proverbs 16:18; 25:28; James 4:5).

That sinning in our spirit begins at our very beginnings:

Psalms 58:3 *"The wicked are estranged from the womb; those who speak lies go astray from birth."*

Isaiah 48:8 *"I knew that you would deal very treacherously; and you have been called a rebel (transgressor) from birth (the belly)."*



In the womb, the adopted child has experienced in his spirit the rejection of his natural parents. He has absorbed all the elements of his environment: Fear, tension, uncertainty, anxiety, guilt, shame, confusion, hatred, anger and pain of his mother.

He has no security in being invited, nurtured and supported in love and being welcomed into the world. Before he sees the light of this earth he may be already confused about his identity, his right to live, his belonging, and may already have a sense of "something must be wrong with me or I would have been chosen". He may already be bound with lies like, "I'm ugly, unlovable"; "No one will receive me". While in the womb he may have been reacting in his spirit with resentment, tightening up in defensiveness, punishing with aggressive anger, or withdrawing in fear or rebellion against life. Certainly rest and trust are

neither formed nor born in him.

Dr. Thomas Verny, M.D. has written a book, *The Secret Life of the Unborn Child* (Summit Books, N.Y. N.Y., 1981) in which he reports the findings of clinical studies conducted all over the world concerning the experience of the child in the mother's womb. These many studies concur that the baby in the womb hears, experiences, tastes, learns, feels and that all of this begins to shape his attitudes and expectations about himself. He can sense and react not only to large undifferentiated emotions in the mother like love and hate, but also to shaded emotions such as ambivalence and ambiguity.

The studies reveal that the unborn child manifests a taste in music responding calmly to soothing music, but reacting violently to all kinds of rock music.

While still in the womb the baby learns to recognize his father's voice and to be comforted by quiet soothing tones that reassure.

Quarrelling of parents while the child is in the womb tends to produce fearful, jumpy, undersized, timid and inordinately emotionally dependent children. A chronic state of uncertainty, fear and deep seated anxiety is built into the unborn child whose mother smokes, and he will react when the mother even thinks of having a cigarette!

Dr. Verny relates numerous fascinating stories of prenatal memory, and many case histories in which the doctors concluded that in some way the child made decisions to react such as refusal to bond with the mother after birth because of her refusal to bond with the child before delivery. He reports concerning the formation of attitudes and personality traits as a result of prenatal or birth trauma.

The book says nothing of spirit, documenting only that which can be observed and evaluated clinically from a secular point of view, but the author does suggest love as a powerful influence for healing.

We have observed that as a child grows, he will, without the transforming power of the Lord, tend to interpret each succeeding experience in the light of what he has already perceived life to be, and according to the way he feels about himself. His woundedness has clouded and coloured his spiritual eyes.

Dr. Verny's report says that a friendly or hostile womb creates personality and character predispositions and anticipation of the outside world. The Bible says in Matthew 6:22-23, "The lamp of the body is the eye; if therefore your eye is clear, your whole body will be full of light. But if your eye is bad, your whole body will be full of darkness."

If therefore the light that is in you is darkness, how great is the darkness. Parents may give to the child lavish affection, and if it is received it may be that their love may "cover a multitude of sins" (1 Peter 4:8). But to reach the root level of a person's innermost being requires the LIGHT in the person of Jesus Christ to penetrate the darkness in the heart of the one who is deeply wounded and confused, TRUTH in the person of Jesus to counteract the lies the child has accepted about himself, the FORGIVENESS of Jesus to cleanse, to heal and enable forgiveness in the heart of the child and the POWER of Jesus to completely transform and make new.

The reality of Jesus affecting the spirit of the child is made possible through prayer for the innermost being of the tiny child inside the one for whom you pray, whether you are praying for a baby or an adult. Jesus Christ is not confined to time and space dimensions.

He can identify with and heal and transform the spirit of a person at any time past, present or future. Our entire life is an open book to Him.

Therefore, it is a simple matter for Him when we pray, asking to become one with the wounded spirit of your child all the way back to the time of conception.

When we have prayed for Jesus to make this identification, we speak directly to the inner being of the child (his spirit) the comfort, reassurance and affirmation of the Lord. We pray something like this:

We say to you in the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ that your life is not a mistake. God made you out of the love that He is. He called you into being at the right time and the right place.

He prepared a way for you and gave His life for you. You are a privilege, not a burden; a joy and a delight, not an intrusion; you belong. You are a treasure just because you are, and not for what you can do. You are one of the Father God's children, and He delights in you, and we delight in you.

We go on to ask the Lord to destroy the lies the child has accepted, and to bring to the cross every destructive attitude, expectation and personality structure or habit pattern.

We pray with vivid imagery seeing the Lord pouring His love all about the child, breathing a fresh breath of life into his spirit, wrapping strong welcoming arms about the child and inviting him to grow into the fullness of his own life restfully as God planned for him from the beginning.

We pray that the inner child be enabled to forgive those who wounded him; we also pray that the child himself be forgiven his negative responses. We pour the healing love of Jesus into the wounded spirit like a healing balm.

We ask the Lord to gift the person with a sovereign gift of trust and rest and peace, and to let his entire being be integrated with wholeness and harmony as he is reconciled to being who he is, where he is.

Then we place the cross of Christ (the stopping place for all sin) between the child and his parents and his parents' parents all the way back through his generations, declaring that all of his inheritance be filtered through that cross. This is not magic.

It is simply a way of putting the Lord in charge and of claiming the blessing and protection of the Lord for one who cannot yet, but later will be required to do that for himself. All inheritance of evil, every curse coming to the child through his family line must stop on that cross. We ask the Lord to hide the child in His own heart and to cast light in the eyes of any powers of darkness that might attempt to oppress or afflict or prevent his life. We stand in the Lord's authority against such powers.

Finally, we place a blessing in the Name of Jesus on the child's life. We ask the Lord to melt any hardness of heart, to strengthen with might the inner man (spirit), to enlighten the eyes of the heart, to open doors for him, to draw him to his destiny and to place a mantle of protection on him.

For the tiny baby newly arrived in your family, this is easy to do. As you hold the baby to feed him or rock him, feed him with love and with prayer, again and again. Close friends of ours made it their ministry for years to take foster babies into their home. Most of these little ones were rigid, fearful, restless and colicky when they first arrived.

But after much hugging, rocking, sweet talk and prayer of the sort we have just described, they would relax and respond beautifully and with alertness from joy, and go into adoptive homes ready to melt into the new parents.

The foster mother would talk to the tiniest baby about the joy prepared for him in his new home and how Jesus would be going with him. Our friends adopted one such child themselves whom the doctors had feared would be mentally retarded because of neglect, abuse and malnutrition.

The love and prayer combination worked a miracle in that little boy and today he is bright, healthy and secure in love as a teenager.

Children under ten or so may be tucked into bed at night with prayers of thanksgiving for them and the blessing that they are, repeated over and over till they learn from the depths of their spirit that they are cherished. Very young children may be prayed for aloud as they sleep, and their spirits will hear the prayer and be gradually secured in love.

Older children who manifest a wounded spirit can be sensitively drawn into conversation about their fears and animosities, and the source of these can be explained to them in simple terms. Invite them to participate in prayer. Ask them to voice their forgiveness and to choose life.

Beyond prayer, persist with affection. Give them the material things they need, but far more importantly, give them you. Play games. Do things together as a family. Laugh. Joke, but do not tease; little children do not understand teasing at all. Don't be threatened by their questions concerning their natural parents.

Do not conceal the fact of their adoption. In their spirit they already know, and if you do not make that known consciously, they will feel betrayed or lied to. Guide them to compassionate understanding of why they were given away.

Let your discipline be firm, loving, consistent and appropriate to the trespass and their maturity level. Compliment. Affirm. Let your love be unconditional. Give your child opportunity to express his feelings. Give him room to fail, and let him have the assurance that he will never lose your love.

Know that you are in the resurrection business, but don't wear that responsibility too heavily. God is in charge. You will make mistakes, but God is bigger than your ability to fail. You may have to repeat prayers and verbal affirmations many times. This does not indicate unfaith or mean that the first prayers were ineffective. It simply demonstrates the fact that when a little child hears the good news that he is loved, he says if not with his mouth, certainly with his heart, "TELL ME AGAIN!", until that message permeates the very fibre of his being.



Someday your child will be able to say to God as we read in:

Psalm 139 *"For You did form my inward parts; You did weave me in my mother's womb. I will give thanks to You, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made; wonderful are Your works, and my soul knows it very well. My frame was not hidden from You, when I was made in secret, and skilfully wrought in the depths of the earth. Your eyes have seen my unformed substance; and in Your book they were all written, the days that were ordained for me, when as yet there was not one of them. Search me, O God, and know my heart; try me and know my anxious thoughts; and see if there be any hurtful way in me. And lead me in the everlasting way."*

Chapter 8:
Dealing with
Gender Identity

This is a sensitive topic nowadays, and even politically incorrect to speak about — that is, gender differences. People want gender *neutrality*.

We have been forced to believe that “different” is unequal. But different is UNIQUE. Male and females have *different* qualities — they each have STRENGTHS that the other does NOT have.

Why then is the world trying to nullify the differences between male and female, instead of celebrating them?

Genesis 1:27 *So GOD created man in His own image, in the image and likeness of GOD He created him; male and female He created them.*

Straight from the Word of GOD — there is NO third option!

The male AND female image represents the GOD of the Universe's Image of creation like no other part of creation does.



- The FEMALE image has been stereo-typed that she has to love to cook, to sew, and be really sensitive and weep easily, etc..
- The MALE image has been defined as competitive and driven, and so forth.

If you don't fit into those “boxes” then you are a “misfit”.

Girls do not necessarily need to be invited into the world of femininity and womanhood ... but little boys need to be invited by their father into masculinity.

There is a definite male and female essence that we need to recognize.

Sons

The male essence is basically: little boys are made to explore the world around them — stretching the limits, conquering, and adventure. It is so deeply wired in to a boy — however, boys need to be encouraged to move in a healthy way in that direction.

No little boy will go into manhood by being scolded and SHAMED by his father. He needs to be INVITED in.

A boy needs to know that he is a part of a fraternity of men. Don't point out the negative things he does and shame him. Emphasize the positive.

A father thinks he has to teach his son a lesson in every single thing the child tries — and so the father focuses on the negative things to try and correct him.

Fathers, you don't have to teach your son a lesson with every single thing he does ... a son does not need an instructor — he needs a DAD — somebody to love and care for him, to nurture his soul — and only a DAD can do that!!

Daughters

Little girls have to face many pressures from girl-culture: to look beautiful, to be smart, to be in fashion, to be “everything” — and the truth is — NOBODY can be everything!

Dads should tell their daughters they look cute — even if they are just wearing jeans and a T-shirt! Tell them WHY they look good — the colours they are combining, how they did their hair, and so forth. If they go out in the world and get teased by their friends, then it doesn't hurt too much because they know they are loved and beautiful at home! Their DAD said so.

What do fathers need to draw out of their daughters to make them feel uniquely feminine?

Women draw to themselves friends, other people (including those that are “outcast”), and so forth. They want others to feel comfortable around them. To encourage our daughters to develop this skill, fathers should notice how they carry themselves socially and comment when their daughter does try to reach out to others that are sitting alone, or are being excluded.

Fathers can also teach their daughters that they can't bring home every little stray dog and cat — as little girls always want to! Through this lesson in childhood, a Dad can teach his daughter that not every boy that is interested in her is WORTHY of her affection and love. She has to choose WISELY. It has been proved that girls that are not fathered well, say “yes” to more boys than what they should, because they are looking for that male affirmation.

All relationships are very important to girls — any confrontation is the end of the world to them! Boys don't have BFF (“best friends forever”) friends like little girls do.

Female Nurturing Skills

Little girls are naturally wired to be NURTURING — it is a physiological chemical reaction in their brains that make them want to be protective, that they want to hold babies close to them, and to cuddle.

Deep down in her heart, a woman wants to be taken care of. She learns this first of all from her father. She is wired by GOD to be important to SOMEBODY — she gets her security from that.

Single Parents

Many children grow up WITHOUT fathers. Nobody can replace a father. However, there are usually other mature/trustworthy men around that can role-model a father's role for the child — a grandpa, uncle, pastor, etc..

For single parents, even watching a movie with their children can also be a good tool to role-model to the child what a good/respectful man or woman is — what a man/woman should do, and what they shouldn't.

What is BOY-Power?

Boys should be encouraged to do what they want to do — playfully hit one another and jostle, smash things - like breaking bottles on a rock, but NOT on the street. A boy must be taught that there are ways to be masculine — there are ways to smash things and “destroy” things ... BUT there are limits as well.

A good man is a man who learns the boundaries — this is what I can and should do, and this is what I should not do.

Selflessness in Husbands/Fathers



This should be an attribute that needs to be instilled in our sons — where a man sacrifices himself for others. For example: firemen, army men, policemen, and so forth — they are not living their lives like they are “cool” — they are putting themselves on the line for somebody else.

You can start teaching selflessness by training-up your son to stand up and give his seat to a lady who enters a room/bus/train/etc.. He must be taught to never apologize for being a GENTLEMAN.

A Gender-Neutral Bible Translation⁴

There are other translations whose editor's state they want to get rid of the "outdated language" of other translations.

Some of the guidelines for a gender-neutral Bible translation were stated by the [NIV Committee on Bible Translation](#) in 1992:

Authors of Biblical books, even while writing Scripture inspired by the Holy Spirit, unconsciously reflected in many ways, the particular cultures in which they wrote. Hence in the manner in which they articulate the Word of God, they sometimes offend modern sensibilities. At such times, translators can and may use non-offending renderings so as not to hinder the message of the Spirit; and the patriarchalism (like other social patterns) of the ancient cultures in which the Biblical books were composed is pervasively reflected in forms of expression that appear, in the modern context, to deny the common human dignity of all hearers and readers. For these forms, alternative modes of expression can and may be used, though care must be taken not to distort the intent of the original text.

The Damage of Some Translations

What have been the results of the proliferation of English Bible translations? [Earl Radmacher](#) and [Zane Hodges](#) had named five "present-day problems" in regard to some of the English Bible translations out in print. The problems are these:

- Decreasing confidence in the inspired text;
- Decreasing basis for correct interpretation;
- Decreasing use of Scripture in the worship service;
- Decreasing expository preaching from the Bible;
- Decreasing memorization of Scripture.

The translations that play fast and loose with the original available autographs also add to a decrease in biblical literacy. Based on what you hear coming from many "Bible-believing Christians", it seems as if the impact has been profound.

One example is found in the [variants](#) in The Lord's Prayer. In the paraphrase book *The Message* it reads:

*Our Father in heaven,
Reveal who you are.
Set the world right;
Do what's best –
As above, so below.
Keep us alive with three square meals.
Keep us forgiven with you and forgiving others.*

⁴ Excerpt, for full article see: http://www.khouse.org/enews_article/2015/2364/print/

*You're in charge!
You can do anything you want!
You're ablaze in beauty!
Yes. Yes. Yes.*

With publishers putting out translations that have these types of variations in it, no wonder people doubt the divine inspiration of the Bible.

The translations highlighted above were written with an agenda; not to accurately translate the Word of God, but to pander to a target audience. The 17th Century Puritan Assembly leader [Richard Baxter](#) was very clear on the subject:

*I like to hear a man dwell much on the same essentials of Christianity. For we have but one God, and one Christ, and one faith to preach; **and I will not preach another Gospel to please men with variety**, as if our Saviour and our Gospel were grown stale.*

LGBT Marriage Re-Definers Introduce The “Throuple”, A Three Woman “Marriage”⁵

When State after State legalized gay marriage, it wasn't difficult to discern that the “slippery slope” syndrome was soon to happen. It did.

“Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!” **Isaiah 5:20 (KJV)**

What is the next marriage redefinition? It's called a “throuple”, and in Massachusetts, a lesbian throuple is awaiting their first born child. Three married lesbians are the throuple who have made news with their newest ‘version of perversion’ of marriage.

They don't have to announce their arrangement in a defiant way. Oh, heavens no ... when Biblical marriage was redefined from “between one man and one woman” to a union of two people (even of the same sex) that opened wide the door to most anything. Political correctness reigns in America. It seems that now it's become an “in your face” to Bible believing Christians.



“They consider themselves a “throuple.” Brynn said, “I like to think of us as a romantic committee.”

Like the gay rights movement, the Massachusetts throuple hopes to strike a blow for polyamorous “rights.”

⁵ Article by [Geri Ungurean](#), 18 February 2015, <http://www.nowtheendbegins.com/blog/?p=30913>

“Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet.” **Romans 1: 25-27 (KJV)**

I fully expect these people to begin to demand their rights and protections, likening themselves to the Civil Rights movement. These sexual perversions are not even in the same ball park as the much needed reforms for American Blacks in the 1960s.

“The announcement is **the culmination of the notion that marriage has an infinitely elastic definition**, according to Robert P. George, the McCormick Professor of Jurisprudence at Princeton University.

“Ideas have consequences,” George said. Once society rejects the notion of marriage as a conjugal union “with its central structuring norm of sexual complementarity in favor of a concept” that “‘love makes a family,’ then what possible principled basis could be identified for a norm ‘restricting’ marriage to two-person partnerships, as opposed to polyamorous sexual ensembles of three or more persons?”

He added that more than 300 ‘LGBT’ scholars and allies, including Gloria Steinem and Barbara Ehrenreich, “have bitten the bullet and said that **there is no reason not to further re-shape ‘marriage’ to include multiple partner unions**” by signing the [“Beyond Same-Sex Marriage”](#) manifesto.”

From BeyondMarriage.org:

We, the undersigned – lesbian, gay, bisexual, and transgender (LGBT) and allied activists, scholars, educators, writers, artists, lawyers, journalists, and community organizers – seek to offer friends and colleagues everywhere a new vision for securing governmental and private institutional recognition of diverse kinds of partnerships, households, kinship relationships and families.

In so doing, we hope to move beyond the narrow confines of marriage politics as they exist in the United States today.

We seek access to a flexible set of economic benefits and options regardless of sexual orientation, race, gender/gender identity, class, or citizenship status.

We reflect and honour the diverse ways in which people find and practice love, form relationships, create communities and networks of caring and support, establish households, bring families into being, and build innovative structures to support and sustain community.

In offering this vision, we declare ourselves to be part of an interdependent, global community. We stand with people of every racial, gender and sexual identity, in the United States and throughout the world, who are working day-to-day ...

Often in harsh political and economic circumstances – to resist the structural violence of poverty, racism, misogyny, war, and repression, and to build an unshakable foundation of social and economic justice for all, from which authentic peace and recognition of global human rights can at long last emerge.

I might add here that women like Gloria Steinem brought Feminism into our culture, and it seems that there has been an obvious correlation between Steinem's Feminism and the eventually break up of the America family – one mom, one dad and children. Steinem felt that the “dad” part was piece of the family puzzle which was not just expendable, but undesirable. She and her movement brought such confusion to men – they didn't even know how to act anymore. Yes, chivalry died in those years. Men were afraid to hold a door open for a woman, lest they be ridiculed.

What's next? Pedophilia made legal, calling it “child sexual love?” Or perhaps bestiality? Or better yet, maybe “throuple/bestiality – of course they don't want to discriminated against the family pet, right?

I never thought I'd live to see this day in America. It seems like a very bad dream, but the problem is that I wake up each day, and it's still there.

Why should God not destroy America?

I think that will happen. But I also think that those of us who are strong enough in the Lord will begin to be thrown in jail, because we refuse to condone these aberrant practices. We will be labeled as “haters” and will pay the price.

Will YOU stand against these most ungodly practices when the time comes? Ask God for His strength in the coming days and months. **MARANATHA!!**

Gender Blending For Boys Is Now In Vogue As Male Dresses Hit The Runway⁶

Suddenly the whole world is unisex. Or is it androgynous? Transitioning?

This is not satire, though it looks like it should be. Major fashion designers, since 2013, have been pushing men's styles clearly into the female column. It's called “gender blending” but it's ultimate effect is more of a transvestite nature than anything else. When you first see this, it's funny. Really funny. Then after you think about it for awhile it's just sad. Really, really sad. Ah ... life in the end times.

Another champion of men in dresses, London designer Jonathan Anderson has been a force for gender blending for several seasons with his J.W. Anderson label. Quieter than Westwood, though no less radical, **Anderson effectively channels the shock of seeing a flouncy mini-skirt on a man's albeit ectomorphic body** on the runway — enough to catch the attention of LVMH, who've installed him at the helm of the Spanish label Loewe.

⁶ Article by [Geoffrey Grider](http://www.nowtheendbegins.com/blog/?p=30723), 10 February 2015, <http://www.nowtheendbegins.com/blog/?p=30723>



Bustiers (yes for boys) came with pockets in-built and were worn like muffs, while pinstripe trousers boasted oversized and outer pockets that spilled from the waist. Torsos were shown off to tight effect through body-hugging knits, which later boasted white picket fence and scissor emblems.

Fluffy coats in pastel shades and leather pleat-skirt tunics further explored **Anderson's "examination of bourgeois kinkiness and boudoir perversity"**, as the show notes summed up.



Chapter 9:

Discerning and
Ministering to
a Slumbering
Spiritman

(Excerpts of this chapter have been taken from “Basic School for the Ministry of Christian Counselling”, Elijah House. Personal additions/changes also made.)

Romans 13:11 Besides this you know what a critical hour this is, how it is high time now for you to wake up out of your sleep and rouse to reality. For salvation (final deliverance) is nearer to us now than when we first believed.

Isaiah 52:1-2 Awake, awake, put on your strength, O Zion; put on your beautiful garments, O Jerusalem, the holy city; for henceforth there shall no more come into you the uncircumcised and the unclean. 2 Shake yourself from the dust; arise, sit [erect in a dignified place], O Jerusalem; loose yourself from the bonds of your neck, O captive Daughter of Zion.

Revelation 16:15 Behold, I am going to come like a thief! Blessed (happy, ^[a]to be envied) is he who stays awake (alert) and who guards his clothes, so that he may not be naked and [have the shame of being] seen exposed!

Mark 13:35-36 Therefore watch (give strict attention, be cautious and alert), for you do not know when the Master of the house is coming—in the evening, or at midnight, or at cockcrowing, or in the morning—[Watch, I say] lest He come suddenly and unexpectedly and find you asleep.

1 Thessalonians 5:4-6 But you are not in [given up to the power of] darkness, brethren, for that day to overtake you by surprise like a thief. 5 For you are all sons of light and sons of the day; we do not belong either to the night or to darkness. 6 Accordingly then, let us not sleep, as the rest do, but let us keep wide awake (alert, watchful, cautious, and on our guard) and let us be sober (calm, collected, and circumspect).

This lesson will help you to understand the function of your own personal spirit. You're going to learn what **causes the spirit to sleep**; how to identify the symptoms; how to distinguish between your **soul** and your **spirit**.

If your spirit man is sleeping, then you won't be able to function in all the areas of life.

The Lord has already made provision - no one need remain asleep. Definite steps can be taken to awaken a sleeping spirit man.



Knowledge of a sleeping spirit man is one of the most powerful keys that has been given to the Body of Christ. It reveals a primary cause for the powerlessness and sinfulness present in the Body of Christ today.

What is a SLUMBERING SPIRITMAN?

A condition in which **the personal spirit has not fully awakened**, so that certain facets of the person's life simply lie dormant.

When should you investigate this condition?

When you have done everything you know, but there's still no breakthrough and in certain areas there's no strength of character.

People with **a sleeping spiritman** can be Spirit-filled children of God that are truly trying to walk in love and to serve others.

Recognizing a sleeping spiritman:

3. **Corporate Worship:** People with vigilant spirits experience and abide in the presence and anointing of God. The sleeping spiritman can only **believe** God is present and when such a person experiences the Spirit, it's usually only so slightly.
4. **Private Devotions:** During quiet times vigilant people easily come into God's presence and experience His love. People with a sleeping spirit experience dry quiet times: When they try to read the Bible, nothing speaks to them - the Word of God is dry to them. Consequently they get easily discouraged.
5. **Revelation from God:** Vigilant spirits have spiritual dreams, see visions every now and then and hear God speak to them. Because God speaks Spirit to spirit, slumberers can't hear Him and think mostly that those who do, are only fooling themselves.
6. **Insight and Inspiration:** Vigilant people are creative. Slumberers are uninspired and copy whatever looks good.
7. **Ability to relate to Time — Past, Present and Future:** Vigilant people have hope. People with sleeping spirits live only for the moment and expect pain to go away immediately.
8. **Empathetic Communication:** Vigilant people "read" others very well and can quickly gather what a person is really saying or who the person really is. They can build good relationships. People with sleeping spirits often say insensitive things that hurt others. They can therefore not sustain deep relationships and fail in doing for the other what is necessary. This can result in frustration, loneliness and often, divorce.
9. **Glorious Marital Sexual Union:** Vigilant people meet one another sexually on all three levels: spirit, soul and body. Sex to people with sleeping spirits is often only on a physical level. They seldom, if ever, experience the glory God intended for the act of marriage.
10. **Mature Conscience:** Awakened Christians enjoy a true conscience, which works powerfully **before** the even to keep them from sinning. Slumberers have only a remorse conscience (Saul), which does not work before the even, but only after. It is self-centred, fleshly, and does not come to the cross and freedom.

HOW can it happen that a person has a SLEEPING SPIRIT?

It usually happens because a person wasn't called to life through:

- Nurture.
- Affectionate touch.
- Parental guidance.

[Man is the only being that becomes like he was brought up.]

The functions of parents are therefore:

- To show affection and nurture children with the capacity to be human, i.e. to have a vigilant spirit, to be able to identify with others, to appreciate and cherish others and to value them more than himself.
- To show love through plentiful affectionate touch.
- To call forth and lead the child's spirit to life.
- To provide boundaries and discipline.
- To build strength into character.
- To provide education for the development of the child in the field that God is calling him/her.
- To train and exercise the conscience of the child's spirit and also to teach the conscience how to function correctly.

GOD IS TALKING TO THE FATHERS:

Ephesians 6:4 *Fathers, do not irritate and provoke your children to anger, but rear them tenderly in the training and discipline and the counsel and admonition of the Lord.*

Malachi 4:6 *And he shall turn and reconcile the hearts of the estranged fathers to the ungodly children, and the hearts of the rebellious children to the piety of their fathers, a reconciliation produced by repentance of the ungodly, lest I come and smite the land with a curse and a ban of utter destruction.*

Dads are primarily responsible to awaken and to bring up the child's spirit. Babies and small children need to be held in their dads' arms. Without it their spirits, just like a houseplant without soil and water in the desert, will very quickly decay and die, specifically in the ability to function as a person.

Our history shows results of dads that had to move away from their families because of the industrial revolution. This resulted in dads being less and less involved with their families and moms having to take over.

THE RESULTS ARE PREDICTED IN 2 TIMOTHY 3:1-5:

- **Rise in crime** - absent fathers brought forth more slumbering spirits, who lack consciences.
- **Rise in divorce** - slumberers can not maintain relationships. Their conscience is also not very sensitive, so they are more prone to adultery.
- **Work** becomes more important than the family.
- More Christians fall into **religious patterns** and can't build and maintain relationships with God. They know theology about Him, forms of worship and the Salvation plan, but they don't know Jesus personally.

HOW to bring HEALING:

- Recognize the problem.
- Determine the quality of nurture provided by parents, especially the father.
- Pray **out loud** and forgive the parents, especially the fathers.
- Pray God's life into them, focusing on the affected areas.
- Directly address the spirit man that was either never awoken or has fallen asleep again because of the pain or the tranquilizing effect of sin.
- Pray comfort and healing over those areas in which the spirit man needs affection.

The needs of the person that wants to get healed:

- The family of God is very important for unconditional love.
- This person needs lots of hugs and affection.

Personal discipline for such a person:

- Pray daily, inviting the Lord to awaken the spirit man.
- Choose **life** everyday.
- Look for daily affection from your loved ones.
- Read many scriptures on **life**.
- Take part in small groups and build relationships. This is very important, but can also be very difficult. When such a person starts living, he/she often wants to run away because of fear.

We are more afraid of the good than of the evil. We flee when goodness touches us because it makes us vulnerable and we'd much rather sleep than be vulnerable! We must learn to face the pain of life and help the person not to roll over and fall asleep whenever pain crosses his/her path.

****REMEMBER!!**** The key is relationships.

Chapter 10:

Parental
Inversion and
Substitute Mate

(Excerpts of this chapter have been taken from “Basic School for the Ministry of Christian Counselling”, Elijah House. Personal additions/changes also made.)

Parental inversion is not an easy sin to hate. The difficulty is that it has become for many the noblest definition of life; the sacrifice and service it involves are readily justified by Scripture. But God asks us to lay down our lives for others for **His** sake, not out of the impure motives of our wounded hearts.

2 Corinthians 12:14 *Here for this third time I am ready to come to you, and I will not be a burden to you; for I do not seek what is yours, but you; for children are not responsible to save up [make provision] for their parents, but parents for their children.*

The terms **parental inversion** and **substitute mate** describe the identity taken on by a child when a parent is unable or unwilling to fulfil his/her parental role. The parentally inverted child will carry the weight of care and responsibility that should rest on the father or mother, and this wounding will drive him/her through childhood into adulthood, **where it will reap destruction** in the individual and in his/her relationship with others.

The role of substitute mate is a more serious type of parental inversion. Both identities must be put to death on the cross and new perceptions built into the nature.

Parental Inversion: A DEFINITION

Parental inversion takes place when identities of parents are taken on by children in homes where one or both parents are absent or ineffective as a result of death, divorce, sin or immaturity. The child tries to take responsibility, to fill the gap, to **usurp** the parental role.

****NOTE!**** These terms are helpful for identification, but can be harmful if used as labels - when counselling, refer to behaviours more than terminology.

What does Scripture say?

The Bible speaks clearly about appropriate parental obligation.

- **Parents must take full responsibility for their children and bear their burdens (2 Corinthians 12:14).**
- **Parents must provide the appropriate boundaries and discipline.**

1 Timothy 3:4 *He [the deacon] must manage his own family well and see that his children obey him with proper respect.*

- **To supply the needs of the family.**

1 Timothy 5:8 *If anyone does not provide for his relatives, and especially for his immediate family, he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever.*

- To call up the special gifts of the child, calling self to death.

Proverbs 22:6 Train a child in the way he should go, and when he is old he will not turn from it.

- To model Godly living.

Isaiah 38: 19 Fathers tell their children about your faithfulness.

The child reacts.

God has established an order to parenting. When it isn't operating, the result may be parental inversion or substitute mate. Many times, at a parent's deathbed, a child is forced to take the place of that parent.

- The child enters into **fear** - "Who will take care of things?"
- The child enters into **striving**; tries to be parent; an impossible job for a child.
- The child becomes **proud** of his "adult" role; built into him by parent who "needs" him - "I can count on you!" The child wants to be a hero.
- The child feels that things are "up to him" - **he loses his childhood**. It normally happens to the eldest child.



SELF-IMAGE:

As adults, these people see themselves as:

- Strong people who help weak people.
- Caretakers, protectors.
- Problem-solvers.
- Life-givers.

Parental Inversion: Symptoms in adulthood:

- **Inability to rest.**
 - But extremely tired.
- **Need to keep situations under control and relationships in order.**
 - "I'll be good".

- **Need to make everything work.**
 - *"Things will get done better if I do them myself."* (compulsive peacemakers)
 - Robs spouse of the chance to take initiative and to use his/her gifts.
 - "Aces out" spouse. *"I want life to be a gift but I'll give it."* The spouse must also participate in decision-making.
- **Difficulty trusting others.**
 - Mistakes and imperfections trigger the need to step in and take over.
- **Difficulty trusting God.**
 - See God as weak, needing our help. *"The world will fall apart."*
- **Inability to say, "I can't do this".**
- **Sense of pride.**
 - "Noble martyrs".
 - *"I'm just making sure you're doing it right."*
- **Tremendous fear.**
 - *"If I stop doing what I'm doing, my family's lives, my life, the world, will fall apart. It will be my fault."*
 - Primary motivating factor behind need to control (see "closing thoughts" section).
- **Trouble handling confusion or disorder.**
- **Denial** - difficulty acknowledging when they are:
 - Trying too hard, pushing.
 - Not allowing mate to function. *"It's my duty to take care of things!"*
- **Inability to feel.**
 - When troubles require attention, he turns off emotion and gets logical. Full of advice, but little "heart".
- **Inability to be corporate and intimate with spouse and children.**
 - Fruits of PI (and SM) surface more recognizably once we become involved in relationship with primary people.
 - Home becomes a work centre. They look for pleasure times away from home.

HEALING for Parental Inversion

(1) Recognition

Help the person to seek out and discern the truth regarding behaviour and motives. The truth sets us free. Encourage the person to ask his/her spouse or friends to speak up when he/she exhibits symptoms, and **to be accountable to them.**

(2) Prayer

Lead person to:

- Ask the Lord to hear his/her **words of forgiveness** for what his/her **parents** did/did not do.
- **Confess judgments against his/her parents.**
- **Repent and receive forgiveness for judging:**
 - Parents.
 - God as weak.

(3) Support

Suggest and encourage new behaviour such as:

- Calling parents (if possible) to say "I love you".
- Giving up trying to control parents, spouse, co-workers.
- Acknowledging attempts to control when confronted.

Mother and Son.



When one parents fails or is gone from home, the child (usually eldest of opposite sex) steps in to fill the vacuum. The son can become the breadwinner, the mother's confidante or her strength to lean on.

The child can also try to discipline the younger children. His position will be like that of the husband, but without the bedroom. There may be no sexual flow yet, but it is in the subconscious. He can later become a model husband in every way except in making love. There he'll be turned off.

Substitute Mate: A more serious form of Parental Inversion

In this situation, a **parent inappropriately relies** on a child of the **opposite sex**:

- For **emotional comfort**.
- As a **confidant**.
 - Undermines mate.
 - Gives child knowledge he/she should not have to carry - "You know your father can't support the family."

- The girl can become like a husband for the mother. This does not allow the father to be the head of the home.
- In worst cases, for **physical satisfaction**.
 - Sleeping with child.
 - Excessive holding, out of need.
 - Incest.

Symptoms of Substitute Mate:

- **All the symptoms of parental inversion.**
- Seeking **refreshment** outside the home (creates vulnerability to adultery).
- **Sexual dysfunction:**
 - Early sexual stimulation due to **usurpation** of parental role.
 - **Electra** (In psychoanalysis, a daughter's unconscious libidinal desire for her father) or **Oedipus** (In psychoanalysis, a subconscious sexual desire in a child, especially a male child, for the parent of the opposite sex, usually accompanied by hostility to the parent of the same sex) complexes.
 - Sexual difficulties in marriage due to inappropriate feelings, guilt.
 - Intense but hidden **hate and anger** toward parent of opposite sex. The child can also gang up with one parent against the other.

PI and SM: Natural consequences of SINGLE PARENTING.

- Single parents must be careful not to put this weight on their children.
- The Body of Messiah must fill the gap for these families.

****REMEMBER!!**** The problem is MOTIVE ... it is not the serving which is sin, but the MOTIVE. *"I must do something or else nothing gets done."*

HEALING for the condition of Substitute Mate:

- **Recognition - identify the root.**
 - An unrealistic willingness to take over.
 - Built on a base of fear, and agreement to parental compulsion.
 - Origins: Lack of understanding, lack of parenting.
- **Forgiveness** - a daily discipline until fully accomplished in the heart.
- **Confession** - of sin of **usurpation**.
- **Repentance/Change** - Help counselees to walk in a new direction. Don't preach; offer suggestions for new behaviour.

****NOTE!!**** Remember that most counselees will not be living in close proximity to parents and that most of the "fruits" of PI and SM are manifested in relation to other primary people. Changes will be facilitated by first forgiving the parents, which takes away the driving force behind the behaviours.

Scriptures:

Proverbs 22:6 *Train a child in the way he should go, and when he is old he will not turn from it.*

Isaiah 38:19 *Fathers tell their children about your faithfulness.*

2 Corinthians 12:14 *Now I am ready to visit you for the third time, and I will not be a burden to you, because what I want is not your possessions but you. After all, children should not have to save up for their parents, but parents for their children.*

1 Timothy 3:4 *He must manage his own family well and see that his children obey him with proper respect.*

1 Timothy 5:8 *If anyone does not provide for his relatives, and especially for his immediate family, he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever.*

A prayer for Parental Inversion:

Father, I thank You for caring enough for me to pursue me, to help me see that in my family the parental roles came to be reversed. I see that I stepped in to fill the gap and, regardless of how necessary or how noble that may have seemed, I recognize I was wrong. In usurping my _____'s role, I denied my own childhood. You did not design my child's shoulders to carry such a heavy weight.

Lord, I forgive my parents for _____ (what they did or did not do). I confess that I have judged them as being _____ (be specific). I ask You to forgive me for those judgements and the bitterness they built in my heart. I also confess that I judged You, Lord, as being a weak God, one who needed my help. I thought I had to do it for You. Forgive me for wounding You in that way.

I have avoided intimacy and corporateness. Father, forgive me for the way I have cut myself off from emotion. I know I did it as a child so that I could function, but now it is a defence mechanism in my life and I have hurt many people with my inability to feel. Forgive me for trying to take over for You and so control my spouse, my world. I resign, Lord; I am not in charge.

Father, it frightens me to ask You to take charge of me and those I love and work with. But I am tired. Bring my fear and my pride to death. I want to trust in You, to rest in You. I ask You to speak peace into my inner being and calm my striving, even as You calmed the sea.

A prayer for Substitute Mate:

Lord, I ask that You help me to forgive _____ for pulling me into the role of spouse. I did not, could not say "no". I have had such mixed feelings: pride that I should be chosen; anger that the other parent did not fill his/her role and protect me; and confusion because I was in a role I couldn't understand or fulfil.

Father, I choose to forgive myself for agreeing totally to the subtle coercion (control by force). I forgive my parents _____ (be specific about what they both did and did not do). And I confess and ask forgiveness for the unexplainable anger. Now I know it was toward mother and father and You, Lord. Forgive me.

It hurts to see how this has affected my own marriage, my spouse, Lord. I see the damage it has caused and want it to stop. I invite You to bring it to death. Bring healing and restore to me, to us, the years the locusts have eaten. Put my relationships aright, Lord, including my relationship with Father God.

Some closing thoughts.

Because many of the symptoms of parental inversion resemble those of performance orientation, it is important to make some distinctions. **Performance-oriented people** believe they **must earn the right to exist**. Their concern is quite **self-centred**; their actions are designed to give them a sense of worthiness in the world.

Parentally inverted individuals are moved by quite another concern: that of **making things better in the family**, in the world. **In this sense they are truly other-centred**, taking responsibility for the well being of those around them.

This is why, without understanding their own motives, parentally inverted people can hardly bear to hear that their actions might be **hurting** instead of helping, **smothering** instead of giving life. We must not accuse them of selfishness, for that would be unjust; instead, we must gently minister truth to these wounded hearts that try so **hard to fix the world around them**.

Divorce.

In the beginning, God created Adam and Eve and intended they be joined together as husband and wife: *"Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh"* (Genesis 2:24; also Mark 10:6-9).

Paul informs us that God's intentions for the marriage relationship between husband and wife could be used as a picture of God's intentions for the relationship between Jesus and His Bride. (Ephesians 5:23).

In addition, God gave humans free will; then Satan entered the picture and he has been working to end God's design for the marriage relationship ever since. Malachi 2:16 says God hates divorce.

Additional issues and concerns:

1. Marriage is a spiritual covenant between God and the marriage partners and it is taken very seriously by God. God intended that there be only one marriage (Genesis 2:24, Mark 10:6-9). Godly spirit and soul ties are created through the covenant of marriage.
2. Divorce is not within God's original design and, therefore, He considers it sin. Spiritual laws are violated in the practice of divorce (Matthew 5:32).
3. There are three easily-identifiable justifications for divorce within the scriptures:
 - Adultery and fornication (Matthew 5:32),
 - An unbelieving spouse who leaves the relationship (1 Corinthians 7:15) or a spouse who has been cheated on and has not sinned by divorcing the guilty spouse, is free to remarry without sin (Matthew 5:32),
 - And while abandonment or sexual sin on the part of either party is clear justification for divorce, other passages (such as 1 Corinthians 7:2-5) suggest a spouse is not under bondage to stay married to a person who violates the vows of rendering due benevolence.
4. The issue—scripturally—is not “the reason for the divorce” but whether or not either spouse has sex with someone else after the divorce, which the scripture calls adultery (*“whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery”*—Matthew 5:32).
5. When adultery happens, God’s “two shall become one flesh” plan (Genesis 2:24) becomes confused, polluted, and broken. When this plan is broken, it provides an entry point for the powers of darkness.
6. Ecclesiastes 5:4-6 suggests that a curse of divorce may be set in motion by breaking a vow with God (and marriage is a vow).
7. Deep wounds of rejection, anger, and abandonment may remain after the broken relationship.
8. Soul ties remain between the couple until these are spiritually cut.
9. The Good News is that God in heaven sent his Son Jesus to die on the cross for us so that we might be forgiven of every sin (Matthew 12:31) (including divorce, sexual sin, or adultery by remarriage), washed clean by the Blood of Jesus, and renewed in relationship to Him by the power of the Holy Spirit.
10. The focus of healing from divorce should not be on trying to determine whether or not sin was committed through this experience but on asking for forgiveness where due and accepting the grace and forgiveness of our loving Father.

Prayer for healing of divorce.

The seeker should follow these steps:

1. Ask God's Forgiveness for your part in the divorce (it is seldom one-sided).
2. Ask God's Forgiveness for any sexual sin that happened before or after the divorce.
3. Ask God's Forgiveness for any sins because of remarriage.
4. Healing from divorce requires total forgiveness of the former spouse.
5. Pray that the part of you that remains with your spouse be loosed.
6. Pray for inner healing for the feelings of rejection, anger, or abandonment.
7. Pray to break the spirit and soul ties created by the former union with the Sword of the Spirit.
8. If the person is now unmarried, pray they can remain celibate so as not to commit sexual sin.
9. If the person has remarried, pray God will recognize the current relationship as the original one designed in Heaven with all the rights, privileges, and blessings of the two becoming one flesh covenant agreement.
10. Pray God will bless the union and the family, in Jesus' Name.

Inner-healing required.

Notwithstanding the adultery questions involved here, there will almost always be a need for inner healing for feelings of anger, betrayal, abandonment, hate, bitterness, and rejection that may result from a divorce. More about inner healing can be found on the section "**Healing of Hurts, Emotions and Memories**".

Chapter 11:

The Three
Heavens

The THREE Heavens

INTRODUCTION

“In the beginning God created the **heavens** and the earth.” (**Genesis 1:1**)

Most people are familiar with this passage. It is vitally important because it establishes how the universe came into existence. It was not an explosion—it was God.

The next level is easily overlooked. It actually explains how God created what we see and don't see. There is a word in this phrase that is plural, and the importance of its plurality cannot be overstated.

The words “**heavens**” is plural in the creation account.

According to Ephesians 3:10 and 6:12, the second heaven becomes the lower parts of the spirit realm where fallen spirits reside.

Ephesians 3:10 *“To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in **heavenly places** might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,”*

Ephesians 6:12 *“For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the **heavenly places**”*

What are principalities and powers?

Ephesians 6:12 tells us that they are the spiritual forces of darkness that we are at war with.

Ephesians 3:10 tells us the church is to make the manifold wisdom of God known to these fallen spirit beings.

Notice, these principalities and powers reside in the “heavenly places.” It refers to our assignment in the **spirit realms**. I make the word realms plural because there is more than one in the second heavens.

The first heaven is the natural realm that we interact with. This comes from **Genesis 1:6-8** when God creates the firmament (or sky) and calls it heaven.

With this explained we can properly understand this portion of the Lord's Prayer:

Luke 11:2 *“And He said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in Heaven, Hallowed be Thy Name. **Thy Kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in Heaven, so in earth.**”*

How does God's Kingdom come?

It manifests as a result of dimensional overlap. When we are instructed to pray for the Kingdom of God to come, we are in essence asking God to conform the earth to the reality of His Kingdom, which is His realm—the God dimension.

Now let us focus on a unique story involving Jesus that illustrates this called the **transfiguration**. In this account, Jesus caused a literal intersection and **overlapping** of the Kingdom of Heaven (or the God dimension) and the earth, and allowed His disciples to participate.

Before the transfiguration, Jesus told His disciples that some would not die until they saw the Kingdom of Heaven (**Luke 9:27**). Eight days later, Peter, James, and John went with Jesus to His prayer time. As He began to pray, His appearance changed and the glory put them to sleep (**Luke 9:32**). When they awoke, they saw Moses and Elijah standing with Jesus (**Luke 9:30**).

Y'shua (Jesus) in His maturity, faith, and spiritual authority caused a **portal** to open to the God dimension, and when Peter, James, and John looked on, they saw into the Kingdom of God. When they entered the cloud, they heard the Voice of the Father (**Luke 9:34-35**) and they saw Moses and Elijah,

Note in this case, the maturity and authority of Y'shua (Jesus) brought His disciples into a **higher dimension** to have a deeper experience with God the Father.

How was Y'shua (Jesus) able to do this?

He had the Holy Spirit— which allowed Him to be present in both Heaven and earth at the same time.

Y'shua (Jesus) modeled the potential life of any believer through the completed work with His death and resurrection.

***Ephesians 2:6** "And hath raised us up together, and made **us sit together in heavenly places** in Christ Jesus:"*

Once we believe in Jesus Christ and receive Him as our Lord and Savior we receive the Spirit of Promise—the Holy Spirit. At that very moment we are seated in Heavenly places with Y'shua (Jesus).

In other words, once we become believers (if we are "clean and holy"), we are simultaneously in Heaven and on earth. The Heavenly dimension is higher than the earth, and our spirit participates in both because they overlap where we are.

That means that once you walk in obedience to the Commandments of Y'shua (Jesus), **YOU CAN TAKE THE TABERNACLE OF LIVING STONES WITH YOU EVERYWHERE YOU GO.**

EXTRACTS TAKEN FROM THE SHINAR DIRECTIVE - Dr Michael Lake

As with all kingdoms, there are levels of authority, governors of territories or regions, and so on. These beings operate within a region of the lower heavens. Although I want to save our discussion of the reality of a multiverse (as revealed within Scripture) for a later time, I do want to point out that there are **three Heavens**:

***2 Corinthians 12:2** "I know a man in Christ who fourteen years ago—whether in the body or out of the body I do not know, God knows—was caught up to the **third heaven**."*

Although the Kabbalah (this Jewish book contains many of the concepts within the mystery religions and is esteemed by Freemasons and the occult) teaches that there are seven Heavens, the Word of God only refers to **three**. Each is contained within its own dimensional reality but can affect lower sub-realities. I believe it looks something like this:

- **Third Heaven** — This is the home of Almighty God.
- **Second Heaven** — This is a dimensional reality between God's Dwelling and our universe. Angels — both God's angels and fallen angels — work to assist in the governing of nations and people from within this region. Occultists have referred to this as the “astral plane”.
- **First Heaven** — This is our universe.

The Second Heaven is alluded to in the Book of Daniel, when an angel was delayed in bringing a message to Daniel:

Daniel 10:10-13 *“And behold, a hand touched me, which set me [unsteadily] upon my knees and upon the palms of my hands. And [the angel] said to me, O Daniel, you greatly beloved man, understand the words that I speak to you and stand upright, for to you I am now sent. And while he was saying this word to me, I stood up trembling. Then he said to me, Fear not, Daniel, for from the first day that you set your mind and heart to understand and to humble yourself before your God, your words were heard, and I have come as a consequence of [and in response to] your words. **But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me for twenty-one days. Then Michael, one of the chief [of the celestial] princes, came to help me, for I remained there with the kings of Persia.**”*

The prince of the kingdom of Persia was a fallen angel who ruled over and empowered the kingdom of Persia.

A Modern Guide to Demons and Fallen Angels provides powerful insights into roles of certain angels in the affairs of nations.

Dr. Michael S. Heiser has argued that the Greek translation of Deuteronomy 32:8 sheds some added light on this arrangement, in his paper "*Deuteronomy 32:8 and the Sons of God*" ...

Deuteronomy 32:8-9 *“When the Most High gave the nations their inheritance, when He divided all mankind, He set up boundaries for the peoples according to the number of the sons of God.”*

The Hebrew reads: "*When the most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when He separated the sons of Adam, He set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel.*"

However, in place of "children of Israel" the Greek reads "angels of God."

If the Greek is correct, then what we are looking at is a specific event and time, in which **God divided the nations of mankind according to the number of the angels of God**. This is specified to have occurred when God divided all mankind. When did God divide all mankind? God divided mankind right after the tower of Babel incident, which was not long after the Flood.

Deuteronomy hints at the fact that the nations were divided under the leadership of angels and that men were driven to worship them instead of God.

Deuteronomy 4:19 *“And beware lest you lift up your eyes to the heavens, and when you see the sun, moon, and stars, even all the host of the heavens, you be drawn away and worship them and serve them, things which the Lord your God has allotted to all nations under the whole heaven.”*

Dr. Heiser has postulated that the angels in **Deuteronomy 4:19** and **32:8-9** were a part of a **divine council** and that God will eventually judge them for leading men away from God and perverting justice. We find this reference in:

Psalms 82:1-8 *“God stands in the assembly [of the representatives] of God; in the midst of the magistrates or judges He gives judgment [as] among the gods. ² **How long will you [magistrates or judges] judge unjustly and show partiality to the wicked?** Selah [pause, and calmly think of that]! Do justice to the weak (poor) and fatherless; maintain the rights of the afflicted and needy. Deliver the poor and needy; rescue them out of the hand of the wicked. [The magistrates and judges] know not, neither will they understand; they walk on in the darkness [of complacent satisfaction]; all the foundations of the earth [the fundamental principles upon which rests the administration of justice] are shaking. I said, You are gods [since you judge on My behalf, as My representatives]; indeed, all of you are children of the Most High. But you shall die as men and fall as one of the princes. Arise, O God, judge the earth! For to You belong all the nations.”*

Men cannot be threatened with loss of their immortality, but angels can. When will this happen?

The point I am trying to make is that **angels do not desire to inhabit human bodies**. The spiritual bodies God gave them work perfectly fine, and **they can manifest their presence in the earth without the need of a human host**. In fact, on many occasions in the Word of God, angels take human form.

The angels of Psalm 82 assist in the governance of nations from the Second Heaven. For those who have aligned themselves with Lucifer, these angels prefer to be the puppet masters who pull the strings that sway nations. We must never underestimate the intelligence or power of these supernatural beings.

Today, modern spiritual warfare is littered with destroyed ministries and lives of those who arrogantly assaulted principalities and powers without a direct assignment from the Throne of God.

God's Concept of a Multiverse.

1. HELL

(In Hebrew, “sheol”).

It contains more than just a place of torment. It has two compartments, according to Y'shua, with an impassible gulf between them (Luke 16:19-31).

One side of sheol was a place of torment and the other was the “Bosom of Abraham” — there people who has died before the cross were waiting in that paradise for its fulfillment. When Y'shua rose from the dead, He emptied Abraham's Bosom and took that great crowd of witnesses with Him to Heaven as the first fruits offering.

2. OUTER DARKNESS

Matthew 8:12 *"While the sons and heirs of the kingdom will be driven out into the darkness outside, where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth."*

Matthew 22:13 *"Then the king said to the attendants, Tie him hand and foot, and throw him into the darkness outside; there will be weeping and grinding of teeth."*

Matthew 25:30 *"And throw the good-for-nothing servant into the outer darkness; there will be weeping and grinding of teeth."*

3. TARTARUS

The most common word used in the Greek New Testament for "Hell" is "Hades." Yet, Peter chose to use another word in his second epistle.

2 Peter 2:4 *"For God did not [even] spare angels that sinned, but cast them into hell, delivering them to be kept there in pits of gloom till the judgment and their doom."*

The Greek word Peter uses is tartaroo (tar-tar-o'-o), which refers to the subterranean region known as Tartarus. In Greek mythology, Tartarus was the abysmal region **below Hades**, where the Titans were confined.

Since Peter was referring to the angels who sinned, he most likely was referring to the **Watchers** who had sinned with human women to produce the original giants (or Titans) of Genesis 6. The Book of Enoch tells us they were chained or imprisoned under the earth.

If we could diagram all this, it would look something like this:

Third Heaven <i>(Eternity)</i>
Second Heaven <i>(Principalities and Powers)</i>
First Heaven <i>(OUR Universe)</i>
Sheol <i>(Place of Torment/Abraham's Bosom)</i> <i>(Outer Darkness)</i>
Tartarus

Diagram of Three Heavens

THIRD HEAVEN	
SECOND HEAVEN	
FIRST HEAVEN	
MAN ON EARTH	

We'll see that the ENEMY operates from the **SECOND HEAVEN**.

Satan's Throne and the Second Heaven.



- A FALSE New Jerusalem is HERE (exact copy of TRUE New Jerusalem).
- A FALSE Temple is HERE (exact copy of what GOD told MOSES).
- A SatanIC chuppah over TEMPLE MOUNT.

All counterfeit/"mixed-seed" religions and/or spirituality operate from the **second heaven**. We give the example above of *Babylonian* religious practices/traditions, but there are MANY others, such as: Hinduism, Mormonism, Buddhism, Freemasonry, etc.. — even MAN-MADE Judeo-Christian traditions operate from second heaven.

We must understand that MUCH of the **DECEPTION** in the world today, comes from (is *channelled* from) that which is in the second heaven, including the fallen angels, principalities, and nephilim of the second heaven.

Satan's ATTACK is focused against:

- 1) The JEWS (the Jews will always first be attacked in the NATURAL, to try and destroy the GOD of Israel).
- 2) The Body of Messiah.
- 3) The Gentiles (all other religions).

Satan's CURRENT AGENDA is:

- **ONE** World Singularity
- **ONE** Religion
- **ONE** Ruler
- **ONE** New Androgynous Man (Female/Male).

WORLDWIDE, we are seeing the ONE-world-religion, of the **ecumenical** movement, coming together ...

Satan's AGENDA of a ONE World Religion.

In recent years, and particularly with the arrival of Pope Francis on the world scene, we are seeing on-going preparations for a ONE world religion, at this point, under the umbrella of the Catholic Church. Across the board, there is a push towards tolerance for all religions, and for everyone to “come together” in LOVE.

There has been a move in even the Protestant/Evangelical/Charismatic assemblies towards merging with the Roman Catholic Church. (For more info, see recent article of 14 March 2014, <http://www.charismanews.com/world/43126-ulf-ekman-says-prophetic-word-confirmed-his-catholic-conversion>)

TAPPING INTO Second Heaven.

In these days, we REALLY need to be GROUNDED in the WORD, and be on our **GUARD** against DECEPTION, asking the LORD for **DISCERNMENT!!**

We've seen that the enemy ALWAYS has a **COUNTERFEIT** to the REAL/Godly ...

With any/all anointings, manifestations, use of (anointing) oils, EXPERIENCES, visions, ART/CREATIVITY, music, prophetic words/actions, Etc.. ...

We MUST DISCERN the Power-SOURCE!!

- **GODLY** anointing, manifestations, prophetic, creativity, etc., are of the **Holy Spirit** ... (like BEZALEL and AHOLIAH, who were anointed by GOD and filled with HIS Spirit for the work of the Tabernacle)
- **FALSE** anointings, manifestations, prophetic, creativity is of the COUNTERFEIT — coming from tapping into second heaven ... (this is a FALSE Bezalel and Aholiah)

An interesting NOTE — the Tower of Babel was an attempt to reach the second heaven.

We need to be SO AWARE and DISCERNING of FALSE “holy spirit” MANIFESTATIONS!!

Y'shua (Jesus) warned for believers to keep watch against **DECEPTION**:

Matthew 24:24-25 “24 For false Christs and false prophets will arise, and they will show great signs and wonders so as to deceive and lead astray, if possible, even the elect (GOD’s chosen ones). 25 See, I have warned you beforehand.”

Revelation 16:13 “And I saw three loathsome spirits like frogs, [leaping] from the mouth of the dragon and from the mouth of the beast and from the mouth of the false prophet, for really they are the spirits of demons that perform signs (wonders, miracles).”

Have you ever wondered where some of the manifestations we are seeing today ORIGINATE from?!

GOLD DUST, for example, is found in Greek mythology, in the story of **Danae** and Zeus:

Fearful of an oracle’s word that the (future) son of his daughter Danae would kill him, King Acrisius imprisoned Danae in a bronze room, with the only opening being the roof (the room was open to the sky), that she would be kept away from all male company.

However, Zeus conceived a passion for Danae, and came to her through the roof, in the form of a **shower of gold**, and impregnated Danae. Their son was Perseus (who is associated with Pegasus, the horse with wings).

Gold dust (as well as “fairy dust”) is also used in VODOO.

In regards to tapping into the second heaven, we need to also be on our guard against **KUNDALINI** and all it’s FALSE holy spirit manifestations.

What then is the GODLY way of approaching the FATHER?

The proper protocol of approaching the FATHER is pictured for us in the layout of the Tabernacle:

- (1) **ALTAR** — I lay down my LIFE.
- (2) **WASH BASIN** — I repent of all SINS.
- (3) **HOLY PLACE** — His Word as my **MENORAH**,
 - **ALTAR of INCENSE** are my PRAYERS,
 - **TABLE of SHOWBREAD** is representative of my WILL being in submission to the FATHER (as the grain is ground to make the bread, so my will is “ground” in submission to the FATHER)
- (4) **HOLY of HOLIES** — SHEKINAH GLORY, the INTIMACY of prayer/RELATIONSHIP.

Above all, we are told not to fear!!

We are to put on the helmet of SALVATION (of Y’shua) — the FATHER is in control, HE is at work with HIS Awesome Plan of REDEMPTION!!

Our hope must be in Y’SHUA (Jesus)!

Remember, the Day of the LORD is the **LORD's** Day — **HIS** Finest Hour!! NOT the enemy's ...

Come QUICKLY King Y'shua!!



Chapter 12:
Captive Spirits

(Excerpts of this chapter have been taken from “Basic School for the Ministry of Christian Counselling”, Elijah House. Personal additions/changes also made.)

Scripture tells us that satan intends not only to kill and destroy, but to steal. **What is it that he wants?**

Isaiah 42:20-22 *You have seen many things, but you do not observe or apprehend their true meaning. His ears are open, but he hears not! It was the Lord’s pleasure for His righteousness’ sake [in accordance with a steadfast and consistent purpose] to magnify instruction and revelation and glorify them. But this is a people robbed and plundered; they are **all of them snared in holes and hidden in houses of bondage**. They have become a prey, with no one to deliver them, a spoil, with no one to say, Restore them! [This shows the condition that will ensue as Israel’s punishment for not recognizing the Servant of the Lord and the day of His visit among them.]*

Zechariah 9:11-12 *As for you also, because of and for the sake of the [covenant of the Lord with His people, which was sealed with sprinkled] covenant blood, **I have released and sent forth your imprisoned people out of the waterless pit**. Return to the stronghold [of security and prosperity], you prisoners of hope; even today do I declare that I will restore double your former prosperity to you.*

As believers, our salvation cannot be stolen from us: we are redeemed. But when we refuse to risk **life**, when we flee or turn away from it, Satan can step in to imprison our spirits, stealing our capacity to function in the **fullness of life**.

John 10:10 *The thief comes only to steal and kill and destroy; I have come that they may have life, and have it to the full.*

Captive spirit is a condition related to, but more serious than that of slumbering spirit. Rather than simply being awakened to life, captive or imprisoned spirits must be set free from powers of darkness. Discernment requires operation of the **gifts of knowledge and perception**, and **careful observation of the symptoms** plaguing the individual. In this lesson, we will explore those symptoms and discuss helps for healing the person with a captive spirit.

The spirit in the TOWER.

Many of us have at some time in our lives suffered some terrifying or painful situations. These are moments in which something shatters in the depth of our spirit. Our spirit and soul is fragmented. The enemy takes advantage of these moments of great suffering and trauma to capture a fragment / piece of us and takes us prisoners in his kingdom. When a person suffers from intense trauma, regions of fear capture his spirit and soul. As fearful circumstances increase during his lifetime, the spirit and soul will sink into deeper levels of captivity.

People are not only tormented in prisons of **fear and anxiety** - there are also **prisons of sin** - valleys of chained people being whipped by demons who coerce them in to sin again and again - it could be **sexual sins**: muddy lakes of sexual filth and perversion surrounded by demons of lust. An example of homosexuality: Men are placed in to prisons in the shape of the male sexual organ and women within the feminine. They are unable to see the opposite sex to see God’s design of sexuality.

It could be **addiction prisons**: people are forced to drink from lakes of alcohol and abuse of drugs. This is not just oppression but possession.

It could be **pain**: when a person suffers deep pain - for example the loss of a loved one, rejection or abandonment, attempted abortion, treason, humiliations and insults. This could result in prisons of hatred, anger, revenge, violence and resentment where they are afflicted and tormented.

- **THE ABYSS, THE PITS, AND THE DEEP PLACES**

In the regions of darkness there are prisons, pits and turbid currents of muddy waters.

Psalm 88:6-8 "6 You have laid me in the depths of the lowest pit, in darkness, in the deeps. 7 Your wrath lies hard upon me, and You have afflicted me with all Your waves. Selah [pause, and calmly think of that]! 8 You have put my [familiar] friends far from me; You have made me an abomination to them. I am shut up, and I cannot come forth."

Regions of darkness:

In the Abyss, in Abaddon and the Shadow of Death. Spiritual holes serve as traps to capture prey. The person drowns in despair and feelings of helplessness with no escape.

Psalm 57:6 "They set a net for my steps; my very life was bowed down. They dug a pit in my way; into the midst of it they themselves have fallen. Selah [pause, and calmly think of that]!"

➔ Sheol

Isaiah 14:15 "Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol (Hades), to the innermost recesses of the pit (the region of the dead)."

➔ Pits of the Abyss and Muddy Pits

Psalm 69:1, 2, 15 "Save me, O God, for the waters have come up to my neck [they threaten my life]. I sink in deep mire, where there is no foothold; I have come into deep waters, where the floods overwhelm me. ... Let not the floodwaters overflow and overwhelm me, neither let the deep swallow me up **nor the [dug] pit [with water perhaps in the bottom] close its mouth over me.**"

SHUT THE MOUTH OF THE ABYSS!!

➔ Pits of Desperation

Psalm 40:1-2 "I waited patiently and expectantly for the Lord; and He inclined to me and heard my cry. He drew me up out of a **horrible pit [a pit of tumult and of destruction]**, out of the miry clay (froth and slime), and set my feet upon a rock, steadying my steps and establishing my goings."

Many people who fall in to **depression** are captive in some pit. They feel that they are sinking further and further into a deep dark hole seemingly without exit. Torment goes on day and night. The person feels bound and imprisoned by invisible walls that smother - even breathing is difficult.

➡ The Pit of Destruction

Psalm 55:23 *"But You, O God, will bring down the wicked into the **pit of destruction**; men of blood and treachery shall not live out half their days. But I will trust in, lean on, and confidently rely on You."*

People are imprisoned in sin to do evil works. They have been overtaken by demons - for example, sorcerers, drug lords, thieves, serial killers, serial rapists, gangsters, and so forth.

➡ The Pit of Corruption

Isaiah 38:17 *"Behold, it was for my peace that I had intense bitterness; but You have loved back my life from **the pit of corruption and nothingness**, for You have cast all my sins behind Your back."*

For example: bribing, lying, stealing taking advantage of others, and so forth.

➡ Places of Death

Death operates in the midst of the natural world in many ways: through fear, sickness, accidents, insanity, and everything that decays. In the spiritual realm, death kills entire movements of the Spirit and destroys assemblies and ministries. Everything man does apart from God is death.

➡ The Shadow of Death

Psalm 23:4 *"Yes, though I walk through the [deep, sunless] **valley of the shadow of death**, I will fear or dread no evil, for You are with me; Your rod [to protect] and Your staff [to guide], they comfort me."*

What a promise for the believer!!

But for those who do not know the Lord, they will be trapped under the shadow of death. There is spiritual activity from the regions of death. These places of intense suffering, trauma, pain, and death are designed to trap and capture many unsuspecting persons.

Hospitals: If you must go to hospital you must immediately close the gates of death and Sheol and spiritually cut all the currents of death and the spiritual tunnels coming from the underworld.

In Jesus we have the keys of Sheol and death - HALLELUJAH!!

• GHOSTS AND SPIRITUAL GRAVEYARDS

➡ Ghosts

Ghost houses, ghost tours, spiritualists, poltergeist spirits are examples of areas operating under the shadow of death.

➡ Spiritual Graveyards

Demons ally with witches and build spiritual cemeteries for pastors and ministries - the objective is to kill the spiritual life of God's servants. Graves and grave stones with the names of the pastors and ministry leaders are used in rituals to affirm destruction.

In prayer one needs to remove the tomb stones and open the prisons and release the pastors and ministry leaders. Then destroy the spiritual graveyard with the power of God.

• THE LAND OF FORGETFULNESS

*Psalm 88:12 "Shall Your wonders be known in the dark? And Your righteousness in the **place of forgetfulness** [where the dead forget and are forgotten]?"*

This is a place of infinite loneliness, sadness, abandonment and rejection. It is a place where the devil imprisons people in order for them to live forgotten by others. If someone is placed in the land of forgetfulness, no one remembers them - no-one remembers their name - in a prayer line, they are passed by In this land everything disappears and is forgotten.

A captive spirit is therefore:

- A condition which begins when, because of early wounding, an individual flees or turns away from life - **rebellion**.
- We lock ourselves in fleshly **strongholds**, unable to function. Often demons take advantage of that (John 10:10).
 - The individual can be aware of something wrong, missing, like the prisoner in a tower might look out of his barred window to view life.
 - Spirit may also go to sleep.

Captives vs. Slumberers

Captives have many symptoms in common with the slumbering spirit - some important distinctions are:

- The **degree** of seriousness or inability to function.
- The **dangers** of imprisonment - spirit can be tormented, traumatized, withered or emaciated in agony.
- The **healing process** involved.

Recognizing the CAPTIVE SPIRIT.

The following questions will help you to discern the condition:

- Do you feel hollow, empty or vacant, as though something is missing; you just want to curl up and die?

Lamentations 3:6-9 *He has caused me to dwell in dark places like those long dead. He walled me in so that I cannot get out; He has weighted down my chain. Even when I cry and shout for help, He shuts out my prayer. He has enclosed my ways with hewn stone; He has made my paths crooked*

- Do you feel alone, lonely and separate, even when with companions?

Psalm 88:18 *Lover and friend have You put far from me; my familiar friends are darkness and the grave.*

- Do you ever feel **persecuted, afflicted or tormented**, even when no one is bothering or hurting you?

Psalm 88:15 *I was afflicted and close to death from my youth up; while I suffer Your terrors I am distracted.*

- Do you sense you have **talents, powers and energies inside** which you can't reach, as though they are locked away from you?

Psalm 88:1-8 *O Lord, the God of my salvation, I have cried to You for help by day; at night I am in Your presence. Let my prayer come before You and really enter into Your presence; incline Your ear to my cry! For I am full of troubles, and my life draws near to Sheol. I am counted among those who go down into the pit; I am like a man who has no help or strength, cast away among the dead, like the slain that lie in a nameless grave, whom You seriously remember no more, and they are cut off from Your hand. You have laid me in the depths of the lowest pit, in darkness, in the deeps. Your wrath lies hard upon me, and You have afflicted me with all Your waves. Selah! You have put my familiar friends far from me; You have made me an abomination to them. I am shut up, and I cannot come forth.*

- Is **marital sex** glorious and joyful, or just **something you do**?
- Do you ever have an **inner rage**, when there is nothing on the surface to be angry about? Captives rage at the prison bars that keep them captive.
- Do you sense there is a film, a mist or a fog over life? Is everything **dimmed, muted, hidden** from you, e.g. colours, sounds, and so forth?
- When in the presence of anointed worship or teaching, do you suffer from over **powering sleepiness** (narcolepsy)?
- When in the presence of an anointed service, or servant, do you sometimes suffer **vertigo (dizziness)**?
- Have you ever suffered from **dyslexia**? It is very common in captives – both dyslexia and captivity have spiritual withdrawal and rebellion behind them.

Watch as you listen:

The counsellor will learn not only from what is said in response to the above questions, but also from:

- Body language.
- Voice inflection.
- Expression of the eyes.

Empathise:

To discern the honesty of answers, pauses before answers are good clues.

CAPTIVITY and DISCONNECTING

An infant's way of coping:

- Older children have ways of coping without detaching from life. They can express feelings verbally, draw boundaries, say "No", state an opinion, even fight back. But the only way an infant can react to abuse or neglect is to **refuse to bond, or "disconnect"**.
- **Disconnecting** (dissociation) can become a practiced way of coping. In the face of continued abuse, neglect or dysfunction, the child will continue to disconnect. Look for inner vows not to feel, not to need, not to express and not to be.
- Usually, a person becomes **captive in infancy**, but sometimes later in childhood, and even rarely in adulthood - as a "last straw" effect.
- Final healing usually comes after a **series of "reconnections"** in which the captive repents of the disconnections he or she has made from life.

EXAMPLES of how can satan take you CAPTIVE

Isaiah 7:6 "6 Let us go up against Judah and harass and terrify it; and let us cleave it asunder [each of us taking a portion], and set a [vassal] king in the midst of it, namely the son of Tabeel,"

The devil is **after a piece of your soul**. He can capture a piece of your soul and then bring **torment** to you.

Satan wants to create an **opening** in us – to break us into pieces through trauma, fear, occultic activity, and so forth, and take a piece of our soul and put it in a place of captivity to continually torment you.

There are demonic places of captivity:

*Psalms 88:6 "6 You have laid me in the **depths** of the **lowest pit**, in **darkness**, in the **deeps**."*

People cannot worship and cannot get a breakthrough if they are in captivity:

Psalms. 142:7 "7 Bring my life out of prison, that I may confess, praise, and give thanks to Your name; the righteous will surround me and crown themselves because of me, for You will deal bountifully with me."

Names of places of captivity:

(1) Sheol

Psalm 49:14-15 “14 Like sheep they are appointed for Sheol (the place of the dead); death shall be their shepherd. And the upright shall have dominion over them in the morning; and their form and beauty shall be consumed, for Sheol shall be their dwelling. 15 But God will redeem me from the power of Sheol (the place of the dead); for He will receive me. Selah [pause, and calmly think of that]!”

People **feed** from **death** – Sheol is their shepherd. When this place controls you, you get sick.

Psalm 30:2-3 O Lord my God, I cried to You and You have healed me. 3 O Lord, You have brought my life up from Sheol (the place of the dead); You have kept me alive, that I should not go down to the pit (the grave).”

Jesus took Lazarus out of Sheol.

Psalm 107:10-14 “10 Some sat in darkness and in the shadow of death, being bound in affliction and in irons, 11 Because they had rebelled against the words of God and spurned the counsel of the Most High. 12 Therefore He bowed down their hearts with hard labour; they stumbled and fell down, and there was none to help. 13 Then they cried to the Lord in their trouble, and He saved them out of their distresses. 14 He brought them out of darkness and the shadow of death and broke apart the bonds that held them.”

(2) Place of forgetfulness:

Psalm 88:10-12 “10 Will You show wonders to the dead? Shall the departed arise and praise You? Selah [pause, and calmly think of that]! 11 Shall Your steadfast love be declared in the grave? Or Your faithfulness in Abaddon (Sheol, as a place of ruin and destruction)? 12 Shall Your wonders be known in the dark? And Your righteousness in the place of forgetfulness [where the dead forget and are forgotten]?”

(3) Pit of despair:

Psalm 40:2 “2 He drew me up out of a horrible pit [a pit of tumult and of destruction], out of the miry clay (froth and slime), and set my feet upon a rock, steadying my steps and establishing my goings.”

In the Name of Jesus ask the Lord to send angels to open the gates so that the captives can be set free.

Psalm 44:19 “19 Though You have distressingly broken us in the place of jackals and covered us with deep darkness, even with the shadow of death.”

Jackals/wild dogs/bulls are all devouring spirits.

(4) There is a place in hell that is like a stronghold – the refuge of lies.

Trusting in anything which is not God, your soul will get trapped in this place, namely the refuge of lies.

Isaiah 28:14-17 “14 Therefore hear the word of the Lord, you scoffers who rule this people in Jerusalem! 15 Because you have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with Sheol (the place of the dead) we have an agreement—when the overflowing scourge passes through, it will not come to us, for we have made lies our refuge, and in falsehood we have taken shelter.

16 Therefore thus says the Lord God, Behold, I am laying in Zion for a foundation a Stone, a tested Stone, a precious Cornerstone of sure foundation; he who believes (trusts in, relies on, and adheres to that Stone) will not be ashamed or give way or hasten away [in sudden panic]. 17 I will make justice the measuring line and righteousness the plummet; and hail will sweep away the refuge of lies, and waters will overwhelm the hiding place (the shelter).

HEALING the captivity self.

Recognition - requires time and care.

- Ask the Lord to reveal the condition of the spirit and the place of imprisonment.
- Ask questions to confirm condition.
- Work with counselee to **understand the conditions**, which may have created **withdrawal** and **rebellion**.

Confession and repentance.

- For withdrawal from life, rebellion - ask the person to declare that he/she wants to be free.
- For anger at God - it wasn't He that put the counselee in prison.

Forgiveness.

- Enable the counselee to ask for, and receive, in prayer.

Prayer.

- Ask the Lord to move into the area of imprisonment and free the person's spirit.
- Ask the Lord to destroy the prison.
- Pray "hiding prayers" for the person who was imprisoned, and send away any "prison guards".
- Ask the Lord to minister to the spiritual condition of the person: emaciation, slumber, etc.. Pray for strength and willingness to choose life.
- Ask the Lord to resurrect the gifts, talents and energies and to restore the inheritance and birthright to choose.

Support.

Help the person to continue choosing life.

- To be willing to pay the price of pain.
- To be willing to risk.

In conclusion:

The Lord's flock has been taken captive. It is very important to give all the glory to the Lord.

Jeremiah 13:16-17 "16 Give glory to the Lord your God before He brings darkness and before your feet stumble upon the dark and twilit mountains, and [before], while you are looking for light, He turns it into the shadow of death and makes it thick darkness. 17 But if you will not hear and obey, I will weep in secret for your pride; my eyes will weep bitterly and run down with tears, because the Lord's flock has been taken captive."

Disobedience takes you to places of affliction and torment.

PRAYER WALKS:

Isaiah 49:8-9 "8 Thus says the Lord, In an acceptable and favorable time I have heard and answered you, and in a day of salvation I have helped you; and I will preserve you and give you for a covenant to the people, to raise up and establish the land [from its present state of ruin] and to apportion and cause them to inherit the desolate [moral wastes of heathenism, their] heritages, 9 Saying to those who are bound, Come forth, and to those who are in [spiritual] darkness, Show yourselves [come into the light of the Sun of righteousness]. They shall feed in all the ways [in which they go], and their pastures shall be [not in deserts, but] on all the bare [grass-covered] hills."

The power of death and graveyards⁷

There are tunnels in the spirit that lead from the graveyards to hospitals. The hospitals are full of demons that suck power from the graves.

Volcanoes are gates of hell. Cities are full of gates of hell and mountains of darkness. Also dungeons and tunnels.

When you go on your prayer walks, it is not only just to speak forth a blessing over the city, but also to go into the gates of hell and set the captives free.

A PRAYER for captives.

Lord, we thank You for the gift of our spirits, breathed into us by You at conception. Now we ask You to lead us to the place where _____'s spirit is. (Wait on the Lord and describe what He reveals to you.) Father, we ask that You move into this place with _____, and lead him/her out. Carry him/her if walking is too difficult.

Lord, I ask You to minister to the wounded spirit and withered "limbs". Massage them, causing the blood to flow again. Pour Your strength in. Pour the oil of Your Holy Spirit over the wounds to bring relief. Wrap _____ in Your robes of righteousness; cause Your healing to radiate all around through spirit and body.

⁷ See the prayer on Death, Hell, and the Grave.

I ask You to declare the boundaries beyond which the enemy may not come. Cause Your brilliance and holiness to shine forth from _____ so that the enemy cannot see.

Sweep away footprints so the enemy cannot follow. Lord, walk with _____ for a while so he/she can lean on You when the legs and the will give out. Give him/her time to gain the strength of body and spirit needed to choose life.

At a pace that is right for _____, I ask that You also release the gifts, talents and energies You gave him/her as an inheritance for living a full life. Return _____'s stolen birthright.

Now, Father, together we dismiss the enemy. We ask that Your angels be commissioned to deal with the powers of darkness as You see fit. We ask You to bring other guarding angels to protect _____. We ask that in Your kindness You seal or destroy the prison (be specific) and blow away all evidence of it with the mighty wind of Your Holy Spirit.

Scriptures:

Psalm 28:1 To you I call, O Lord my Rock; do not turn a deaf ear to me. For if You remain silent, I will be like those who have gone down to the pit.

Psalm 30:2-3 O Lord my God, I called to You for help and You healed me. O Lord, You brought me up from the grave; You spared me from going down into the pit.

Psalm 40:1-3 I waited patiently for the Lord; He turned to me and heard my cry. He lifted me out of the slimy pit, out of the mud and mire; He set my feet on the rock and gave me a firm place to stand. He put a new song in my mouth, a hymn of praise to our God. Many will see and fear and put their trust in the Lord.

Psalm 88:1-8 O Lord, the God Who saves me, day and night I cry before you. May my prayer come before You; turn Your ear to my cry. For my soul is full of trouble and my life draws near the grave. I am counted among those who go down to the pit; I am like a man without strength. I am set apart with the dead, like the slain who lie in the grave, whom you remember no more, who are cut off from Your care. You have put me in the lowest pit, in the darkest depths. Your wrath lies heavily upon me; You have overwhelmed me with all your waves. You have taken from me my closest friends and have made me repulsive to them. I am confined and cannot escape.

Psalm 88:15 From my youth I have been afflicted and close to death; I have suffered your terrors and am in despair.

Psalm 88:18 You have taken my companions and loved ones from me; the darkness is my closest friend.

Isaiah 42:20-22 [The Lord speaking] "You have seen many things, but have paid no attention; your ears are open, but you hear nothing." It pleased the Lord for the sake of His righteousness to make His law great and glorious. But this is a people plundered and looted, all of them trapped in pits or hidden away in prisons. They have become plunder, with no one to rescue them; they have been made loot, with no one to say, "Send them back."

Lamentations 3:6-9 *He has made me dwell in darkness like those long dead. He has walled me in so I cannot escape; He has weighed me down with chains. Even when I call out or cry for help, He shuts out my prayer. He has barred my way with blocks of stone; He has made my paths crooked.*

John 10:10 *"The thief comes only to steal and kill and destroy; I have come that they may have life, and have it to the full."*

2 Corinthians 4:4 *The god of this age has blinded the minds of the believers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, Who is the image of God.*

Don't Let The Past Paralyze You⁸

by Brenda Kunneman

So many people allow negative experiences and broken dreams to stop them. Yet God has the power to propel you beyond your disappointments.

Have you ever heard the statement, "Experience is the best teacher"? It's true. The problem is that experience can teach you the wrong things as well as the right ones. A person who is severely bitten by a dog, for example, generally has a lifelong dislike—and often fear—of dogs. People can have all sorts of fears and phobias because of one bad dream, accident or tragic event in their lives.

When we experience a major trauma or disappointment or live under a particular negative circumstance for a long time, we tend to become hindered in some area of our lives. We find ourselves changing the truth of the Bible, God's Word, and His ways to match up with our personal experiences. We come under a spirit of captivity because our culture or experience has taught us something that is completely different from the ways of the Spirit of God.

Once a spirit of captivity has taken root in your life, you will start to lose your sense of purpose—perhaps not your entire life's purpose, but some aspect of it. You may be bound by a fear of flying, for example, or by a pattern of persistent anger and abuse.

Though you love God with all your heart, your past may have been so dysfunctional and full of hurt that now you cannot seem to break out of horrible habits developed long ago. Even after evil spirits are cast out of you, your mind must be renewed. In other words, you have to learn a new way of living that is according to God's ways.

For example, if your pattern growing up was that your father could never seem to keep a good job or provide a stable income, then without your realizing it, those years in "Babylon" can lead to similar inconsistency in you. You find yourself going through the years not being able to get ahead in life and thus feeling like a failure without any solid goals.

⁸ Taken from <http://www.charismamag.com/site-archives/555-christmas-compassion/spiritual-growth/6559-dont-let-the-paralyze-you?tmpl=component&print=1&layout=default&page=>

This is how a spirit of captivity tries to destroy your purpose. You have learned something that is not in line with godliness. The demons may have come and gone, but they have left a permanent imprint on you.

Romans 12:1-2 gives us insight into this revelation and provides some hands-on ways we can change wrong mindsets:

“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God” (NKJV).

First, Paul pleads with us to keep our flesh pure. Whatever your flesh has been used to doing, you must take charge and tell it, “No.” You could be engaging in a serious addiction or a bad habit of gossip. You might have an excessive need for attention or bad spending habits.

Verse two offers further help. It tells us not to be conformed to the world. That means you decide not to play the world’s game. You realize that God has a different pattern and that you need to learn how to live by it. That is what it means to be transformed.

Your mind must change what it has felt secure believing and gravitating toward. The New Living Translation says it this way: “Let God transform you into a new person by changing the way you think. Then you will learn to know God’s will for you, which is good and pleasing and perfect” (v. 2, emphasis added). You must go through a process of renewing your mind and relearn how to live after you have been captive to something.

You may need to attend the “school of the Spirit” for a season, learning new mindsets in one area or another because your mind must be rehabilitated. If all you ever knew growing up was drug and alcohol abuse, when you come out of that abusive lifestyle you are required to form a new pattern. Then the next time you are pressed with a trial or the devil beats you down, you won’t revert back into the captivity of addiction.

Instead, you will be armed with a new and tested source of dependency—God’s will and His ways. Your mind has new “experiences” that it can refer to that have replaced your previous ones. These become dependable weapons during times when your life gets tampered with by the devil.

Effects of Captivity

The Bible says the enemy comes to steal, kill and destroy. He uses the spirit of captivity to steal your:

Identity. *Captivity keeps you from feeling as if you fit in with the rest of the family of God and being able to see yourself as having an integral part in the kingdom.*

Anointing. Captivity causes you to stop sensing God's presence. You lose your ability to worship freely and intimately. When you attempt to worship, you feel empty and dry, and your mind goes back to your problem.

Vision. Captivity takes away your sense of purpose in life. You find yourself wandering from one thing to another, trying to find satisfaction. You don't have any long-term goals, vision or confidence in your talents. You quit using your talents to do anything significant, and your struggles become larger than your goals.

Authority. Captivity neutralizes your warfare. You become paralyzed by certain events and reminded of the times you have failed before. You determine there is no point in trying to overcome the problematic issue in your life because you will probably fail again. You see yourself as an inadequate warrior with little anointing to stand victorious against evil forces.

Confidence. Captivity undermines your confidence. You feel as if you can't finish anything. You become apologetic and unsure of yourself. Even when you venture into something new, you have no fruit to show for it.

Besides stealing from you, the spirit of captivity leaves you feeling:

Surrounded. Have you ever felt as if you couldn't see a way out because there were too many problems to handle? When captivity tries to take all that God has imparted into your life, you feel surrounded and overwhelmed by your circumstances.

Empty. You feel as if you cannot get a fresh word or direction from the Lord. It is almost as if there is some sort of blinder over your spiritual insight. You don't know what Scripture to read or even how to begin in prayer. You become desperate for a word, prophecy, dream or Scripture that will speak to you.

Intimidated. You run from your problems because you are too intimidated to address them.

Confused. Because you don't have a plan for your life, you become confused. Confused people are also divisive and disagreeable. They can't seem to get along with anything or anyone because they don't know where they are headed in life.

Blind. Spiritual blindness prevents you from seeing God's fresh move and purpose. Then you become bound by formula and religion. You can no longer accurately discern the way of God and thus begin to adopt strange ideas and doctrines.

Getting Free

If you can identify the effects of captivity in your life, don't despair. It is possible to get free from this spirit and its results.

When we become Christians and turn our lives over to Jesus, He sets us free from the power of a "Nebuchadnezzar" or captivity spirit so we can rebuild our lives as the temples of the living God. However, many believers don't let go of the influence of "Babylon" because they feel it's not their fault that they were taken there.

Maybe your parents didn't take proper responsibility for raising you. You could use that as an excuse to remain in Babylon for the rest of your life. But to truly be free after your life has been tampered with, you must let go of the excuses.

A friend of ours once told us about a time when she was trying to overcome a spirit of anger. She admitted that she had a temper and was feeling bad after having blown up at someone. Immediately she said: "Well, Lord, I'm sorry. I just can't help it because I'm French, and French people have tempers."

She said she heard the Lord loudly reply inside her, "Well, I'm not French!" In other words, the Holy Spirit in you is not focused on why you are a captive. He is interested in bringing you out of the captivity!

Someone may have horribly hurt you and left you broken and bruised in life. But God wants you to get past that hurt so it doesn't keep you in bondage, doing things you hate for the remainder of your life. While in captivity, the children of Israel had to take responsibility for their state even though some of them had no part in committing the sins that caused them to be taken to Babylon.

You are the temple of the Lord that Jesus wants to rebuild, and He is there to help separate you from the memories and influences of your past to make it happen. He has come to live inside you to force every bad habit, every bad attitude and every feeling of failure out of your life.

2 Corinthians 6:16-17 says, "And what agreement has the temple of God with idols? For you are the temple of the living God. As God has said: 'I will dwell in them and walk among them. I will be their God, and they shall be My people.' Therefore 'Come out from among them and be separate, says the Lord. Do not touch what is unclean, and I will receive you.'"

That is what God is looking for with you. He wants the spirit of captivity removed so there is more room for Him in your life. The next verse goes on to say, "I will be a Father to you, and you shall be My sons and daughters, says the Lord Almighty" (v. 18). Regardless of the habits and lifestyles you have become accustomed to, you will find them losing their influence on you when you see God as your Father.

When you know your heavenly Father, you become unfamiliar with any other "family." Your Father wants to be your greatest source of influence and to replace what you once knew. You can ask the Lord to reveal Himself to you as your Father. For many whose lives have been tampered with, this is difficult to do because so many people didn't have a positive fatherly influence in their lives.

Ask the Lord to help you receive Him as the good Father that He is. You don't always have to understand how He will do it because the Lord is supernatural. He can impart miracles that will shake you and change your entire outlook on life in one moment of time.

Here are some positive steps you can take to remove captivity from your life:

Expose the captivity. Acknowledge what is holding you captive. It may be a type of fear, an attitude, your words or an addiction. Be willing to see these areas and call

them what they are in your life—captivity and bondage. Exposing the root will prevent it from growing back. Face it and then start a new life with a new direction.

Let go of excuses. Take responsibility for living as a captive. How or why you were invaded by the devil can no longer be your focus. Repent now and get your own actions right before the Lord so you can move on to reclaim your real purpose in life.

Separate from Babylon. Decide you do not want the spirit of captivity in your life, and be willing to detach from it. The children of Israel had to make the decision to come out of captivity and change their habits. They could not keep going back to what had become familiar. They had to learn a whole new way of living.

Run to your ABBA Father. When you decide to see God as your Father, all the other control figures in your life will start to weaken as the culture of your new family takes over.

If you allow Him to, the Lord will deliver you from any type of past culture this spirit of captivity has imparted to you. That is what Jesus came for—to set you free—and He is an expert at doing it.

Chapter 13:

Dr. Frans Cronje
Presentation

contents

Introduction: Survey on Ghosts and Spirits ...	136
PREFACE:	139
Chapter 1: Personal Background ...	141
Chapter 2: Why the Scientific Controversy ...	143
Chapter 3: Why the Christian Scientific Controversy ...	146
Chapter 4: Boundaries ...	149
Chapter 5: Covenants, the Foundations for Life ...	152
Chapter 6: So What are Ghosts, Demons and Evil Spirits ...	160
Chapter 7: Definitions ...	163
Chapter 8: Biblical References ...	174
Chapter 9: Other References ...	186
Chapter 10: Transcorporeal Signs (TCS)	190

contents

Chapter 11: Extracorporeal Signs (TCS) ...	195
Chapter 13: Why Bother About These Phenomena ...	199

Survey on Ghosts and Spirits

Please be completely honest about what your current experiences and beliefs are on ghosts and spirits. Just indicate what you ***think or believe at this moment in time.***

Thank you!

Questions:

(1) Ghosts do exist?

- ☐ Definitely not.
- ☐ Probably not.
- ☐ Possibly.
- ☐ Quite possibly.
- ☐ Definitely.

(2) I have had a personal encounter with an entity that I considered being a ghost:

- ☐ No, never.
- ☐ Yes, once.
- ☐ Yes, more than once.

(3) Someone in my immediate family (parents, siblings, spouse, children) has told me that they have had a personal encounter with a ghost:

- ☐ Yes
- ☐ No

(4) A non-relative (friend, acquaintance, co-worker, employer, employee, etc..) has told me that they have had a personal encounter with a ghost:

- ☐ Yes
- ☐ No

(5) I consider ghosts to be the exact same spiritual entities as_____:

- ☐ Demons.
- ☐ Unclean spirits.
- ☐ Evil spirits.
- ☐ Familiar spirits.
- ☐ Spirits of divination.
- ☐ Deaf and dumb spirits.
- ☐ Legion.
- ☐ Leviathan.
- ☐ Other: _____.

(6) I believe that the following have authority over ghosts (i.e., the ability to evict/exorcise them):

- ☐ Nobody - as ghosts don't exist.
- ☐ Only GOD or higher spiritual powers - not humans.
- ☐ All individuals with a spiritual worldview (irrespective of their religion).
- ☐ All moral (decent) humans.
- ☐ All humans do.
- ☐ Only the following do (specify): _____.

(7) Ghosts are able to oppress people (i.e., affect their lives negatively, including affecting their health and relationships):

- ☐ Definitely not.
- ☐ Probably not.
- ☐ Possibly.
- ☐ Quite possibly.
- ☐ Definitely.

(8) Ghosts are able to possess people (i.e., take control of their lives and will):

- ☐ Definitely not.
- ☐ Probably not.
- ☐ Possibly.
- ☐ Quite possibly.
- ☐ Definitely.

(9) Ghosts may offer help/assistance to people (i.e., help them with information or knowledge or good fortune):

- ☐ Definitely not.
- ☐ Probably not.
- ☐ Possibly.
- ☐ Quite possibly.
- ☐ Definitely.

(10) All communication with ghosts is forbidden:

- ☐ Yes, absolutely.
- ☐ No, not at all.
- ☐ Other: _____.

(11) Ghosts are responsible for the phenomenon called reincarnation:

- ☐ Definitely not.
- ☐ Probably not.
- ☐ Possibly.
- ☐ Quite possibly.
- ☐ Definitely.

(12) Ghosts are associated with the consequences of:

- ☐ Breaking of oaths, covenants, or other means of foreswearing.
- ☐ Premature death, accidents, violence, war or murder.
- ☐ Love or passion.
- ☐ Jealousy or hatred.
- ☐ Greed or avarice.
- ☐ None of the above.
- ☐ Other: _____.

(13) Select any number of the following characteristics that, in your current opinion, would represent features you would link or associate with a ghost - they:

- ☐ Have no material substance.
- ☐ Have the features and traits of previously living human individuals.
- ☐ Display distinct human facial, clothing, body features.
- ☐ Express/display interests associated with human life.
- ☐ Manifest during high energy atmospheric states (like storms).
- ☐ Tempt people into sinning.
- ☐ Provoke terror.
- ☐ Produce illness.
- ☐ Produce madness.
- ☐ Pursue vengeance or reconciliation.
- ☐ Are linked/associated with objects or locations.
- ☐ None of the above.
- ☐ Other: _____.

(14) Worship or appeasement of ancestors or the spirits of dead ancestors is rooted in:

- ☐ Idolatry.
- ☐ Witchcraft.
- ☐ Heresy.
- ☐ Cultural familiarity with ghosts.
- ☐ None of the above.
- ☐ Other: _____.

GHOSTS, DEMONS & EVIL SPIRITS Perspectives from Scripture and Science By Dr Frans J. Cronjé MBChB, MSc

PREFACE

This project started as a simple discussion over coffee. It grew into two formal lecture presentations requiring more reading and research than I could possibly have imagined. Then, upon completion, I was asked for a simple transcription of my lecture notes... What started as a simple dictation became a dissertation – this dissertation!

Following the guidelines for post-modern scientific writing, I have written in the first person active rather than in the third person passive voice of former years. For those more accustomed to the ‘feel’ of objectivity the latter style attempted to convey, please tolerate the extensive use of the word “I”.

It is not ego but honesty that has encouraged me to do so. I admit readily that my perspectives will certainly be incomplete and biased. All I can hope for is that my approach will be as transparent as my subject.

Because the scope of this subject is so wide, and because my objective has been to offer Biblical and scientific perspectives on this extensive area, I had to decide how to present the central thread without losing the benefit of a large body of highly relevant, but non-essential background material.

My choice was to transfer much of this to footnotes, together with the references.

My hope is that this will facilitate ready access for detailed reviews without burdening a more cursory reading.

I have also rendered personal opinions and interpretations as well as comments related to my personal spiritual worldview as footnotes to offer those who wish to examine these the opportunity to do so, but without distracting or burdening those who do not; these footnotes are prefaced by the abbreviation **MSWV** for My Spiritual World-View.

Professionally, I am a physician and a scientist: By physician, I mean that I have completed the training and licensing requirements of the governments of South Africa and the USA to practice medicine as a profession.

I have devoted much of my life to studying, understanding and applying natural principles and techniques which oppose disease and store people to health.

By scientist, I mean that both my training and practice of living is characterized by a systematic and conscientious pursuit of reliable, wholesome knowledge.⁹

⁹ **MSWV:** Before moving on, allow me to present my personal statement of faith: I wish to record it as part of this material, and to do so at the very beginning.

It represents an intrinsic bias and it is therefore important that it is declared overtly: It is the standard by which I have judged my own words, and by which I also wish my words to be judged.

To this end I would like to state for the record that I believe that:

- (1) Jesus Christ of Nazareth is my personal Lord and Saviour; that He is the only begotten Son of God: born in the flesh of a virgin; died on a tree (cross); rose from the dead by the Spirit of God and sits at His right hand from where He will return.
- (2) My spiritual 'status' is that of a born-again, Spirit-filled, Spirit-baptized Believer and follower of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, adopted son of God the Father, led and equipped by the Holy Spirit. My materials are in complete submission to God and the Lordship of Jesus Christ. They are for His glory alone.
- (3) Salvation is not by works but only by God's grace and mercy through the sinless life, atoning death and physical resurrection of Jesus Christ of Nazareth.
- (4) God's greatest gifts to us are salvation, justification, and the offer of covenantal relationship (as his servants, friends, sons and daughters, and his bride).
- (5) Our response is to live gratefully, in obedience to His Word, led and equipped by His Spirit, with unselfish love towards Him, others and ourselves.
- (6) The resurrection of the dead is central to our faith: the prospect of a glorified body, in an eternal relationship with God and our family of faith, is the foundation of our hope and the fulfilment of God's love for us.
- (7) The original Hebrew and Greek Scriptures that we call 'the Bible' are the inerrant and infallible Word of God.
- (8) My work is for the glory and purposes of God and my goal is to participate in the advancement of His Kingdom; to provide teaching and insight to equip the Body and Bride of Christ to prepare herself and the earth for His coming, by being an active and effective partner in His plans for redemption, reconciliation and the restoration of creation.

PERSONAL BACKGROUND

I suppose it's only fair to ask -- why a medical doctor would or could have anything to say about a topic such as this. Well, seven years ago, I would have agreed. I had no interest, knowledge, or experience in this area. Indeed, I still do not consider myself an expert by any means.

However, I do hope that I might be able to provide some helpful perspectives - to clarify or stimulate thought and encourage discussion of this controversial theme.

So, that being said, how did I become exposed to this material? There is a spiritual and a professional answer to this. They obviously overlap, but I will try to keep them somewhat separate:

From a spiritual perspective let me begin by saying that my paternal grandfather was a minister of the Dutch Reformed Church, so that was the heritage of faith in which I was raised.

My father was a diplomat and I was born in London. I have been exposed to many cultures and countries throughout my life and have learnt to appreciate different perspectives.

Professionally, I chose to study medicine after national military service. Then, in my fourth year, one of my first patients at the old HF Verwoerd hospital, was a gentleman with psoriasis.

I foolishly asked the professor what the cause of this was, seeing that the condition was so poorly understood – and still is. He replied, in no uncertain terms, that there was some emotional aspect involved, but that we would be using coal tar, cortisone cream, and ultraviolet light.

Amidst the awkward silence that followed, I discovered that something significant had shifted in my heart; there was a frustration and a sense of discontent about the unquestioned acceptance of a non-cause-directed therapy. Yet I had no tools with which to mount any better response, and it took many years before I started acting on my frustration.

To briefly summarise the rest of my professional training background: I finished my MBChB at Pretoria University in 1991, followed by a BSc (Hons) and MSc in Aerospace Medicine in 1997 and 2006 respectively. In 2001, I completed the United States Medical Licensing Exams.

Upon completion, I did a 1-year Clinical and Research Fellowship at Duke University in North Carolina, USA. I have now been licensed and have practiced Medicine in South Africa and in the USA. I have taken care of patients for more than two decades; together with them I have experienced a generous number of triumphs and failures, breakthroughs and barriers. I have done research on chemicals, rodents and humans and published some of my more useful findings.

I have worked with diving, hyperbaric and aviation medicine, wound care, and vestibular, balance and tinnitus rehabilitation, genomic medicine and clinical biochemistry in military, private practice, and university settings.

Following completion of Prof Harold Koenig's Research Workshop on Spirituality and Health at Duke University¹⁰, I served as the primary investigator of a three-year, prospective, observational outcome-based study on physical, mental and spiritual health parameters associated with a US-based ministry.

The outcomes were very encouraging and are pending publication at the time of writing this. Most recently, I have been introduced to quantitative electroencephalographic (Q-EEG) based diagnostic technology, which analyses various electrical patterns and connections within the brain. It identifies various levels of suppression, overstimulation, deregulation, and brain network disassociation; the findings and changes offer a fresh perspective on common patterns of body, soul and spirit derangements.

¹⁰ <http://www.spiritualityandhealth.duke.edu/index.php/5-day-summer-research-course>

WHY THE SCIENTIFIC CONTROVERSY?

Before answering this, I need to explain where my interest in ghosts, demons and evil spirits originate. 'Interest' might actually be far too strong a word; it was more a matter of 'bumping into' or 'being confronted' by it.

It would only be fair to say that it was actually my frustration with the inconsistency, ambiguity, controversy and confusion surrounding this topic – spiritually and scientifically – that got me looking into it more carefully. But apart from this, my profession has also challenged me: Within the ambit of my academic and clinical training, and practice of aerospace, diving and hyperbaric medicine, I have encountered various situations that produce altered states of consciousness – specifically in aviators and divers¹¹.

Some have reported external viewing and recollections that are very similar to out of body experiences (OBE's) and near death experiences (NDE's). So this has certainly sensitized my interest and has challenged the prevailing materialist theories of mind¹².

¹¹ This in itself was not unique. However pilots and divers are typically physically fit; they are not critically ill patients or on their death beds. Recoveries are therefore quick and their recollections of such experiences are typically immediate, easier to record and – arguably – more reliable. For instance, in high altitude training, aviators are exposed deliberately to low partial pressures of oxygen to allow the participants to experience hypoxemia with loss of consciousness. In simulations and training in human centrifuges, pilots of high-performance aircraft experience acceleration or G-force associated unconsciousness (loss of circulation to the brain) to discover and extend their physical limits. On the other side of the pressure spectrum there are compressed gas divers who experience the narcotic and sometimes psychedelic effects of gases such as nitrogen, xenon, and hydrogen. Then, there are breath-hold-divers for whom the combination of high carbon dioxide and low oxygen often produces altered consciousness. Clinically, we have also treated patients with carbon monoxide poisoning who, not infrequently, make very rapid recoveries under hyperbaric oxygen therapy and report their abnormal experiences.

¹² This in itself was not unique. However pilots and divers are typically physically fit; they are not critically ill patients or on their death beds. Recoveries are therefore quick and their recollections of such experiences are typically immediate, easier to record and – arguably – more reliable. For instance, in high altitude training, aviators are exposed deliberately to low partial pressures of oxygen to allow the participants to experience hypoxemia with loss of consciousness. In simulations and training in human centrifuges, pilots of high-performance aircraft experience acceleration or G-force associated unconsciousness (loss of circulation to the brain) to discover and extend their physical limits. On the other side of the pressure spectrum there are compressed gas divers who experience the narcotic and sometimes psychedelic effects of gases such as nitrogen, xenon, and hydrogen. Then, there are breath-hold-divers for whom the combination of high carbon dioxide and low oxygen often produces altered consciousness. Clinically, we have also treated patients with carbon monoxide poisoning who, not infrequently, make very rapid recoveries under hyperbaric oxygen therapy and report their abnormal experiences.

Then, in July 2014, my attention was drawn to an article posted in You magazine. A South African academic researcher was soliciting people's testimonies on OBE's and NDE's. We met and compared our notes. Littered with controversy though the subject was, it seemed to me that the actual 'sticking point' was not so much the subjective nature of the experience itself. After all, everything we perceive is ultimately subjective; we are dependent on the sensitivity and specificity of our physical senses from which we then compose personal interpretations of reality.

No, the real spanner in the works was the organic substrate: the ongoing presence of a physical body – even if clinically dead – that was the problem! As long as there was a physical body to point to, there would be residual doubts about any truly extracorporeal theory of mind¹³. So I raised the question of whether there was any good evidence of a persistence of mind or consciousness beyond the point of biological death or even burial. To me it seemed premature to explore, develop or test any hypotheses before examining the available evidence for these phenomena.

Surely any evidence suggesting some measure of continued existence, and possibly even consciousness after death and burial of the body, would demand an expanded hypothesis. My views are not unique; many reputable scientists are also in support of non-materialist theories of mind¹⁴.

¹³ Clearly, this is not neutral subject: there are significant religious implications, not to mention the threat to the prevailing theories of mind. Perhaps also – as professionals and scientists – our natural curiosity becomes conditioned by scepticism and even cynicism as the sacred mysteries of old are reduced to secular mechanisms by irreverent scientific methodology. Therefore, we secretly fear to be deemed fools, naïve, gullible or superstitious; we choose to hide under the fig leaves of arrogance, collective prejudice or denial. Quite apart from being an affront to conventional science, most people also have a visceral aversion to the subject of death and the concept of ghosts in particular: For an Atheist, it challenges disbelief in an afterlife; for a Theist, it provokes a greater sense of accountability and judgment; for the Gnostic, it may erode hopes of ultimate spiritual freedom; for the Agnostic, it encroaches on a disinterested neutrality; and for those who believe in possession or reincarnation, the danger of intrusion or futility of escape. The net result of this is that science remains aloof and personal beliefs remain unchallenged. Still, it would be scientifically dishonest to ignore or dismiss out of hand the significant body of evidence for soul transmigration phenomena, and the nearly universal human experience of some level of interaction with previously deceased individuals.

¹⁴ (1) Beauregard, M., Schwartz, G. E., Miller, L., Dossey, L., Moreira-Almeida, A., Schlitz, *et al.* (2014). Manifesto for a post-materialist science. *Explore (NY)*, 10(5), 272-274. (2) Sheldrake, R. (2000). The "sense of being stared at" does not depend on known sensory clues. *Riv Biol*, 93(2), 237-252. (3) Sheldrake, R. (2009). The credit crunch for materialism. *Explore (NY)*, 5(3), 135-136. (4) Sheldrake, R. (2013). Setting science free from materialism. *Explore (NY)*, 9(4), 211-218. (4) Sheldrake, R., Avraamides, L., & Novak, M. (2009). Sensing the sending of SMS messages: an automated test. *Explore (NY)*, 5(5), 272-276. (5) Sheldrake, R., & Beharee, A. (2009). A rapid online telepathy test. *Psychol Rep*, 104(3), 957-970. (6) Sheldrake, R. *Dogs that Know When Their Owners are Coming Home: and other unexplained powers of animals*, New York, NY: Crown, 1999 (second edition 2011).

So this became the reason and justification to research this area more formally: It is not that I was interested; rather it simply couldn't be ignored¹⁵.

¹⁵ The schism between science and 'parapsychology' remains rather entrenched due to the theoretical and methodological premise on which each is founded: Scientific perspectives on parapsychology – usually designated as pseudoscience -- are typically prejudicial and derogatory (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Parapsychology>). Post-modern scientists and Parapsychologists argue that Science has become wilfully ignorant to the extent of promoting Scientism as an ideology (<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scientism> ; Beauregard, M., Schwartz, G. E., Miller, L., Dossey, L., Moreira-Almeida, A., Schlitz, *et al.* [2014] Manifesto for a post-materialist science. *Explore (NY)*, 10(5), 272-274.) Medicine is divided, although it still leans heavily towards the materialist scientific worldview. Not all health professionals harbour equal disdain for this area of inquiry, however: Those involved in caring for the dying, and nurses in general, are far more accepting. Skeptics are quick to dismiss personal accounts, even by professionals; often gender-bias or occupational fatigue is implied. But for those who seek diligently, without imposing the prospect of ridicule, many health professionals will volunteer their personal encounters and non-materialist convictions. Not infrequently, the experiences have a common origin or involve the same deceased individual. In such cases, credibility is enhanced significantly when the experiences involve different witnesses; different perception modalities (i.e., sight, smell or touch, visions or dreams); occur spontaneously, out of any associative context and in the absence of knowing about the person's passing; and are recorded without the witnesses being aware of each other's experiences or influencing each other's accounts.

WHY THE CHRISTIAN THEOLOGICAL CONTROVERSY?

Apart from those who deny or ignore the concept of spiritual entities entirely – evil or otherwise – the primary areas of disagreement surrounding the concepts of **demons** and **evil spirits** amongst Judeo-Christian Believers¹⁶ appear to include:

- ➡ whether or not Believers can be ‘possessed’ by, ‘have’, or be affected by a spirit or a demon;
- ➡ who or what is to blame for the ‘Fall of Man’: is it a failure to trust God and to resist the temptations imposed by his own appetites, or is it due to spiritual influences;
- ➡ whether human depravity is the result, or the cause, of these spiritual influences;
- ➡ whether it is essential to identify and evict specific entities, or whether the amount of attention and blame attributed to specific spiritual entities is to the detriment of other spiritual priorities and disciplines such as repentance, renunciation of sin, discipleship, personal responsibility, maturity in faith, etc.;
- ➡ divergence of opinion on the merits and the actual process of deliverance or exorcism¹⁷;

¹⁶ How the status of ‘Christian’ or ‘Believer’ is defined varies greatly amongst different streams of faith and denominations and may include, e.g., infant-baptised, established Church members, ‘saved’, ‘born-again’, ‘Spirit-filled’, ‘Spirit-baptised’, etc.

¹⁷ There are those who approach the practice of deliverance or exorcism primarily, and sometimes exclusively, as a legal process vs. those who engage by means of a power encounter: By legal process we mean the systematic process of removing any rights the harmful entities may have to an individual’s life by confession and renunciation of oaths, vows, ungodly covenants, etc.; this is analogous to a judicial or court proceeding. By power we mean the premise that Believers are given authority and power to evict these entities by coercion and force of will; this is analogous to a police force or SWAT team arresting or destroying offenders by sheer fire-power and against their will.

- ➡ divergence of opinion whether or not to engage spiritual entities in conversation¹⁸ :
- ➡ whether the level of responsibility and God-given ability given to Believers requires that they deliver themselves and others from these influences, or whether it depends entirely on the sovereignty, will and power of God for this to occur – i.e., casting out vs. submission and prayer¹⁹;
- ➡ the underlying cause (e.g., chance, misfortune, God’s will, trauma, personal- or generational unrighteousness) or specific practice (e.g., idolatry, witchcraft, occultic involvement, sexual impurity, incest, etc.) responsible for the spiritual influence, or the level of influence, and the level of difficulty in removing these entities from an individuals’ life.

¹⁸ The concern is that any form of conversation with a spiritual entity seems contrary to Scripture (i.e., one should not ‘entertain spirits’ or ‘enquire from the dead’); often reference is made to Jesus Christ “not allowing the demons to speak” although the Scriptural context suggests that this was mainly to avoid them declaring him to be the son of God in public. There are also concerns that conversation may establish a relational tie and make individuals specifically vulnerable to oppression or possession. Facilitating or encouraging an oppressed individual to manifest may constitute ‘channelling’ of the entity in the process of soliciting a response. Communication with spiritual entities also affords the opportunity for deception. On the other hand, those who are involved in deliverance ministry have, sooner or later, realised that they have been talking to someone other than ‘original’ the human host. There also appears to be a Biblical precedent for “preaching the Gospel to the dead” as Jesus Christ is said to have done in the first and second letter of Peter. There may be theological and practical distinctions between speaking to spiritual vs. soul-based entities, e.g., ‘demons’, ‘deceased human spirit-souls’, a ‘demonic-soul-copies’, etc. There is also suggestion that purely monologue approaches (i.e., not conversing, but only commanding) may not always provide resolution. The varying impact of practices involving “past-life-regression”; spontaneous deliverance after confession and renunciation; and some reported dramatic changes in the human host when the deceased human soul-spirit reconciles their ‘unfinished business’ in some way and departs voluntarily. On the other hand there are certain refractory situations of a non-organic nature; these suggest that a broader range of approaches, and a less dogmatic theological framework, may need to be considered.

¹⁹ In Mar 6:13 we see that Jesus’ disciples were given authority to cast out demons. This is also stated specifically as one of the characteristics of those who believe and follow Him (Mar 16:17). On the other hand, there is a ‘kind’ of ‘spirit’ that Jesus indicates can be driven out only by prayer (Mar 9:29); and as James states – “Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. Draw near to God, and he will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners, and purify your hearts, you double-minded”. Jas 4:7-8 ESV. This also provides a subtle reference that the solution to double-mindedness is actually cleansing and purity of the heart – or put differently: removing uncleanness.

As for **ghosts**: here the main areas of disagreement seem to be the result of:

- ➡ Scientism, denial or prejudice;
- ➡ general fear of evil and death;
- ➡ a presumed lack of theological or Biblical support for human soul- or spiritual residua remaining on earth after death;
- ➡ the predominant belief that when a person dies their spirit goes to either heaven or hell immediately;
- ➡ secularised and ambiguous vocabulary and lack of common understanding regarding finer distinctions between spirit and soul (e.g., unconscious, subconscious, etc.);
- ➡ uncertainty and discomfort about the possible mechanisms and reasons how and why the residua of a deceased human soul or -spirit may enter, influence, 'take over' or 'reincarnate' into another human being.

As stated previously, I am not a theologian by training; I am not an anthropologist, psychologist or a mental health practitioner either. I do not claim to be an expert in this field, and it is not even of primary interest to me.

Accordingly, I do not maintain a position of presumption or arrogance, nor am I driving a particular agenda -- religious or scientific. I am, however, concerned about the unhelpful ambiguity and controversy which surrounds the subject. To this end, I ask you as readers to afford me the kindness of briefly suspending any preconceptions before you have reviewed the actual evidence²⁰.

I would like to encourage you to also adopt the wisdom displayed by a certain rabbi in response to questions on scientific validity of ghosts: "There is no evidence that [ghosts] do not exist, and therefore it is more scientific to believe reliable witnesses." J.R. Mintz. *Legends of the Hassidim* – 1968.

It is also my pragmatic theological philosophy that Mankind has been given authority for the purpose of dominion. This includes a mandate to explore those things that are rendered detectable by our senses – even when these are extended by means of devices (e.g., microscopes, telescopes, infra-red sensors, etc.).

Where this type of evidence does exist, we have permission and the responsibility to explore.

²⁰ Religious superstition and scientific arrogance are both defensive postures and the historic enemies of truth. God is not afraid of the truth, so we should not be afraid either.

BOUNDARIES

Given the nature of this topic, I want to establish some clear boundaries to frame my approach and the selection of material I will be sharing:

First of all, I want to set some *spiritual boundaries*²¹. I have tried deliberately to employ neutral language as far as possible. However, certain concepts such as resurrection, reincarnation, soul transmigration, angels, demons, and ghosts have definite religious and cultural connotations.

Consequently, there is a certain danger that the meaning of these words may be presumed based on the reader's frame of reference. Using these terms may also create the impression that I am in agreement or even endorsing a particular spiritual perspective. To avoid this, and for the purpose of greater clarity, I will be defining exactly what I mean when designating a particular term²².

The scientific boundaries I am setting are meant to provide an opportunity to evaluate – carefully and diligently – some of the recorded observations and phenomena. The goal is also to prevent fear or unsubstantiated theories from distorting the actual observations:

²¹ **MSWV:** The readers of this work are most likely to have a Judeo-Christian background. As such, I want to acknowledge the authority of Scripture as my foundational premise. I am also bearing in mind, however, that at best I will only have partial insight and incomplete understanding; I certainly do not pretend to be an expert on the cultural, linguistic, hermeneutical, interpretive or spiritual ramifications. On the one hand, we do need to be careful to confuse the simplicity of the Gospel with folklore or superstition. On the other, simply dismissing or ignoring a major part of our common human experience is unhelpful; so we should maintain a healthy respect and attitude of humility towards things we don't know or don't fully understand.

²² **MSWV:** My hope is that this will better facilitate discussion and limit the impact of cultural bias, religious bias, superstition, scientific arrogance, partial understanding, ignorance, unsubstantiated dogma or prejudice of obscuring the actual evidence. Let us trust that a humble and honest pursuit of evidence will lead us to the Truth, and that God can guide us through our partial understanding. Occultism has two dimensions: (1) deceit – the obscuring, distortion, control or manipulation of truth and, (2) denial – the unwillingness or failure to advance in our understanding in the light of revealed truth. The goal is to avoid either of these.

If we can at least arrive at a basic level of common understanding, we will already have achieved a great deal. When setting scientific boundaries we also need to consider the tools we are using: subjectivity vs. objectivity and evidence vs. *proof*²³.

In the hopes of making the concepts more tangible, I will use a set of analogies: On a continuum from uncertainty to certainty, evidence is like a fuel that prompts and motivates the process of further discovery; hypotheses are the preliminary constructs of possible truth into a type of “test vehicle” with which to move forward; experiments are then like obstacle courses where the test vehicles are challenged for performance in different situations; the findings are then rendered in terms of the probability of chance (or p-value) – i.e., an indication of whether it is more likely to be a good test vehicle or dumb luck that has kept us going.

If the p-value is large (i.e., more likely to be chance), the vehicle is suspect; if very small (i.e., more likely that it's a good vehicle), we have more confidence to continue driving it – cautiously – as we refine the tests or modify the vehicle. *Proof* (i.e., absolute certainty) remains an elusive goal, whereas evidence – starting with a proper observation – encourages us to keep going in the direction it is pointing!

²³ We all depend on our physical senses for perception. We also know that our senses have defined and limited spectra of energy that we are able to detect through vision, hearing, smell, touch and taste. As such, we have to recognize that, at best, we are only sampling a limited broadcast of reality. Once detection has occurred, we require awareness of it, and attention to it, before recording and interpretation begins. Given that awareness is shaped by experience, and experience is subjective by definition, absolute objectivity is impossible. The best we can hope for is greater or lesser levels of agreement on a particular experience and its interpretation. Whether this is *absolute truth* or a *collective hallucination* becomes philosophical at some point. Creating and testing hypotheses is the way Science has embraced the process, but it is not the only method, nor is it suitable in every situation. The point is that our understanding of ‘truth’ shifts based on many factors, including changing intellectual, political and cultural paradigms. So, pursuit of ‘reality’ or truth also needs to be guided by relevance: Are the observations helpful to our understanding of the world and our ability to function sustainably within it? This, indeed, is ultimately the objective of scientific enquiry – *the pursuit, discovery and extrapolation of predictable principles, derived from a wide range of incidental experiences and then subjected to various controlled observations, for the purpose of optimal and sustainable individual and collective existence.*

Lastly, there are also *social boundaries*²⁴: In presenting this material, I have been deliberately sensitive to avoid representations that are unduly morbid, graphic or likely to produce visceral responses. These only taint the discussion with unnecessary emotional overlays and obscure our actual objective. I have therefore sought out relatively 'familiar' and 'normal' phenomena, rather than indulging in the truly exceptional, so that we start from a common foundation most likely to result in basic agreement.

As far as possible (and I readily submit any of my statements to correction) I have only used information and observations that have never been discredited at the time of my writing this. There are obviously hoaxes around, but it would be decidedly unscientific to state, as fact, that all ghost phenomena are either fabrications or hallucinations.

²⁴ There is something of a social paradox in terms of ghosts. Themes of ghosts, disembodied humans, and encounters with deceased loved ones, are extremely common and are surprisingly over-represented in the arts and social media. Gallup polls suggest that more than a third of Americans believe in ghosts, haunting, and departed loved ones not necessarily leaving altogether. Yet discussing these phenomena ranges from being completely taboo in many Churches and Synagogues, to being considered 'normal' in end-of-life care settings. This creates an unfortunate and rather unhelpful schism between public Judeo-Christian dogma and the private spiritual experience of many Believers. Recently, a South African film was released about the well-known Uniondale ghost – *Die Spook van Uniondale*. The film does not seem to portray the actual historic characters involved in the story, but the filmmakers appear to have done their homework on the issues of ghost phenomena *per se*. I do not necessarily endorse or recommend the movie, but because it is in the public domain, and rated PG 7-9, the illustrations are probably as neutral or benign as may be found on this topic. If it facilitates more constructive discussions about the topic, this may be of benefit.

COVENANTS – THE FOUNDATIONS FOR LIFE

Before looking specifically at various spiritual concepts and entities, I would like to start by clarifying certain concepts about covenants, as these form the boundaries of the relationships that God honours and upholds. This knowledge is essential because breaching the boundaries of these foundational relational frameworks seems to be a common thread – both for the appearance of these spiritual phenomena and vulnerability to their effects²⁵.

Biblical covenants are a major theological topic in and of itself. By necessity, and to avoid expanding this work unduly, a lot of the background information on covenants is presented as footnotes.

²⁵ **MSWV:** Allow me to contrast Salvation and Sanctification briefly. It is important for the purpose of understanding why the consequences of violating the principles of Covenants affects Believers. It is not relevant to those who are reading this material for largely academic purposes or those who hold alternative worldviews. We live in a society that wants freedom and rights. There is an expectation that our country, government and even God should meet our needs. In the Church, specifically, there is a tendency to believe that God owes us good things, whereas our debts to God are all paid by the shed blood and broken body of Jesus Christ. Is this actually the full truth? Do we owe God nothing? And if we do, what is the standard by which we are judged under the New Covenant? Do any of God's Laws still apply? Are we liable for anything under our New Covenant with God? Does Grace simply cover sin or is its purpose rather to lead us out of it? For many pre-Christians and even for many Believers, the basic belief is that our primary objective is to be 'saved' to 'go to Heaven'. Otherwise, we go to Hell. But is that the full story of Mankind? *Is Salvation all there is to the story?* If so, why is it important to grow in our faith given that 'going to Heaven' is all there is to live for? Whenever we hear about God's expectations of us, though, there is a certain discomfort. It seems that we are confusing Salvation and Sanctification, though. Salvation is God's gift to us. It cannot be earned. However, the process of Sanctification (or maturation) is a shared responsibility. God takes the initiative, but we can choose how to respond and also to choose our attitude within that response. Often the default position is that we are all sinners saved by Grace – and of course this is true. But it is the baseline for the journey. The destiny of Mankind is not *only* about overcoming sin and death and 'going to Heaven'. Ultimately our destiny is to grow into a more mature relationship with God in taking care of His creation, including our human body. The issue is also not merely whether we do or don't sin – we *all* do. The issue is whether we are content to remain sinful by *habitual practice*; whether we allow ourselves unquestioningly to be shaped by sin and the desires of the flesh, or whether we allow God to not only save us for eternity, but also to mature us in ways that are consistent with eternal life and receiving of a resurrected body. If our stewardship of the first body is so poor, why give us a second one? That is why His love has boundaries which we can overstep. That is why His covenants have both provisions and penalties – for Him and for us. He laid down His life for us to bring us back, but are we prepared to stay and to grow in this privileged relationship with Him?

Importantly, to appreciate the extent to which we are affected by the consequences of the Fall, we must first examine the Scriptural boundaries of God's provision and protection²⁶.

There is also a gradual maturation and a progressive redefining of covenant relationship with God over the recorded history of Mankind – each with its own set of privileges and penalties (a synoptic view is provided in the footnotes).

²⁶ **MSWV**: From God's perspective there was a covenant of Creation for which we don't know the timeline. Within this overarching covenant of Creation, a covenant of relationship was established, and in it we find the creation of Adam and Eve. A breach occurred whereupon God engaged in a covenant of reconciliation. The latter, after the crucifixion and resurrection of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, became part of a covenant of restoration which is still playing itself out up to the creation of the new heavens and new earth of Revelation 20. From man's perspective the original 'Adamic' covenant has been redeemed by a new or second Adamic covenant. Towards the latter part of this timeline, Scripture points to a time of tribulation and a Messianic or millennial period commencing with the Judgment seat of Christ and ending with the White Throne Judgment. In the process of re-establishing man as God's representative on earth, there is a progressive maturation of relationship.

The Apostle Paul details the covenantal boundaries in reverse order in **Ephesians 2**²⁷.

²⁷ **MSWV**: Given this perspective, Paul's words in Ephesians 2 take on so much more meaning: they describe the various levels of Covenant, by defining our original level of alienation, and then point out the extraordinary privilege and power of God's Grace to again bring us near: *"And you were dead in the trespasses and sins in which you once walked, following the course of this world, following the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that is now at work in the sons of disobedience—among whom we all once lived in the passions of our flesh, carrying out the desires of the body and the mind, and **were by nature children of wrath, like the rest of Mankind [i.e., Noachide Law violators]**. But God, being rich in mercy, because of the great love with which he loved us, even when we were dead in our trespasses, made us alive together with Christ—by grace you have been saved—and raised us up with him and seated us with him in the heavenly places in Christ Jesus, so that in the coming ages he might show the immeasurable riches of his grace in kindness toward us in Christ Jesus. For by grace you have been saved through faith. And this is not your own doing; it is the gift of God, not a result of works, so that no one may boast. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand, that we should walk in them. Therefore remember that at one time you Gentiles in the flesh, called "the uncircumcision" by what is called the circumcision, which is made in the flesh by hands—remember that you were at that time separated from Christ [i.e., not in a "Bridal" Covenant through Christ], alienated from the commonwealth of Israel [i.e., not in a "sonship" Covenant through Moses] and strangers to the covenants of promise [i.e., not in a "friendship" covenant through Abraham], having no hope and without God in the world [i.e., not even in a "servant" covenant through Noah]. But now in Christ Jesus you who once were far off have been brought near by the blood of Christ. For he himself is our peace, who has made us both one and has broken down in his flesh the dividing wall of hostility by abolishing the law of commandments expressed in ordinances, that he might create in himself one new man in place of the two, so making peace, and might reconcile us both to God in one body through the cross, thereby killing the hostility [i.e., removing the division between the 'sons of Israel' and 'the stranger who dwells among you' as per Leviticus 17, 18 and 19]. And he came and preached peace to you who were far off and peace to those who were near. For through him we both have access in one Spirit to the Father. So then you are no longer strangers and aliens, but you are fellow citizens with the saints and members of the household of God, built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus himself being the cornerstone, in whom the whole structure, being joined together, grows into a holy temple in the Lord. In him you also are being built together into a dwelling place for God by the Spirit." **Eph 2:1-22 ESV***

He describes how Gentile Believers were redeemed from their hopeless, Godless state of alienation to now being included in the New Covenant²⁸.

Once Jesus returned to Heaven, and the Holy Spirit was poured out on Believers in Jerusalem, the former distinctions between believing Jews and Gentiles became blurry. With Cornelius receiving a circumcision of the heart by the Holy Spirit, and being baptised by the apostle Peter, the question arose under which covenant the believing Gentiles would now form part of the greater Commonwealth of Israel. Throughout Israel's history there had been the concept of the stranger who dwells among you. There was also the proselyte or Jewish convert, and there was the Jewish born. Which of God's laws applied to the believing Gentiles, if any? This question came to a head in **Acts 15**²⁹.

²⁸ **MSWV**: In the Garden of Eden, God gave man life, land, law, leadership, and love. All of these were lost as a result the Fall. So, starting again with Noah, God initiated a set of defined relationships or covenants in which He re-established each of the parts that was lost. Noah was moved from death to life by the waters of the flood. Abraham was moved by faith from unrighteousness to righteousness, with the covenant of circumcision being the sign that he would receive the Promised Land. Following the deliverance from Egypt, Israel under the leadership of Moses received the covenant of the Law, which moved them from the wilderness to the Promised Land. Then, a covenant of Leadership was introduced with King David. Finally, through the birth, life, death and resurrection of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, God showed how His law intended to provide a stable framework and boundaries for love. This was to form the basis whereby God's Kingdom would be re-established on earth again.

²⁹ There was a very strong argument in favour of Jewish proselytizing via physical circumcision, but Peter argued that physical circumcision was redundant for those who had already received the circumcision of the heart by the Holy Spirit. After all, he said, even those under the Law understood that they were saved by the Grace of God from the very beginning. So, under which covenant would the Gentiles be incorporated: Noah, Abraham, Moses, or David? Paul and Peter believed that the Gentiles should be embraced as equals with the Jews without a requirement for circumcision. Paul refined this in several letters by maintaining that one should remain in whatever state one was at the time of receiving Jesus Christ of Nazareth as Saviour. As a result, Timothy – who had Jewish ancestry – was circumcised, whereas Titus – who did not have Jewish roots – never was. But this did not clarify every aspect of how the Law of Moses would apply to the Gentiles; it only addressed the physical issue of circumcision. Even today, this battle continues in the Law versus Grace debates.

To understand the Acts 15 decree, it is important to consider how it fits into the progression of covenants³⁰: After the debate, James, as the leader of the Jerusalem council, made the following summarizing statement which became a decree and was issued to all the Christian churches:

³⁰ **MSWV**: The covenant of Noah, was a requirement for life; it was fully inclusive of all Mankind – Jew and Gentile; and it included animals – all creatures with breath who were saved from the flood. Irrespective of whether people believe in Jesus Christ or not – there is a covenantal penalty in the form of God’s wrath and judgment when its terms are violated. It formed the basis of God’s judgments on the earth’s population prior to the flood; on the citizens of Sodom and Gomorrah; on the inhabitants of the land of Canaan; and on Amalek and Edom. It never imposed the requirement of earning salvation; rather it *established a way of life in the knowledge of having been saved by God* – from the beginning. Salvation was always provided by God starting again with Noah being saved from the flood. Therefore, by submitting to God’s covenant with Noah, there was actually an intrinsic acknowledgement of the God’s salvation from the flood. This acknowledgement was to be expressed by means of a life of gratitude, service (worship) and accountability before Him. Conversely, rebellion against the rules of covenant, also called the *Noachide Laws*, or denial of their validity (and therefore of God’s sovereignty) either by individuals or nations, were grounds for losing the right to serve as God’s representatives on earth. These practices have resulted in many civilizations being subject to God’s judgment and self-destruction at some state – the Roman Empire being a good example. Violations of the *Noachide Laws* are particularly relevant to this material: It seems that violations at this level are specifically associated with ghost phenomena, even for pre-Christians. But what happens in the case of Believers who have progressed to further levels of covenant in their relationship with God? What would be considered the basis of this progression or maturity, and how did this apply to the eventual ruling of Acts 15? Primarily, the ruling had to define the covenant boundaries whereby the Gentile Believers in Jesus were to be governed. At face value this seems a rather strange ruling. Certainly one could ask why three food laws and fornication were singled out. What is less obvious is that these four items were really a cross-references to a specific segment of Scripture. Unlike modern Bibles, with chapters and verses, themes were used to refer to particular sections of a Torah scroll. These four laws referred specifically to Leviticus 17 and 18. The associated sections state the following foundational laws for God’s people dwelling together. Importantly, this applied not only to the house of Israel but also to the *strangers who are staying among you*, which therefore made it relevant to Gentile Believers and it was decreed formally by the Jerusalem Council: Lev 17:1-16: “*And YHVH spoke to Moses saying..., and you shall say to...any man of the house of Israel, or of the strangers who are staying among you... [17:8]...offers a burnt offering or sacrifice, and does not ...offer it to YHVH, even that man shall be cut off from among his people. [FOOD OFFERED TO IDOLS] [17:10]...who eats any blood, I will set My face against that soul who eats blood, and will cut him off from among his people. [BLOOD] [17:13]...who hunts game, beast or fowl, that may be eaten, he shall even pour out its blood and cover it with dust...or [17:15]...that eats a dead body, or a torn thing...shall both wash his clothes and bathe in water..., But if he does not he shall bear his iniquity. [THINGS STRANGLED]”*... Continuing through Leviticus 18, the entire chapter addresses the issue of sexual purity with an emphasis on righteous offspring, wholesome family and healthy community life.

“For it seemed good to the Holy Spirit, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things; That ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keep yourselves, ye shall do well. Fare ye well. Acts 15:28-29 KJV”.

James was actually re-issuing an ancient Biblical decree defining the fundamental boundaries of the ‘laws of loving your neighbour’³¹.

These same laws therefore remain binding on the Church, as an original apostolic decree, to this day. The net result is that in addition to the foundational requirement of acknowledgement and submission to God as man’s Saviour under the Noachide Laws (which are applicable to all of Mankind and even the animal kingdom), the provisions of **Leviticus 17 and 18** are required of all those who are in covenant with Jesus Christ of Nazareth.

The dilemma is that, in the modern Church, Believers are sometimes deceived into believing that such violations – particularly sexual violations – have no impact on our covenant relationship with Jesus Christ.

³¹ **MSWV**: Again, this applies to the native *or any stranger that lives amongst the Israelites*, making it a pre-requisite for all Believers. It is helpful to understand the ultimate intent of this section, as summarized in Leviticus 19:18: “...*you shall love your neighbour as yourself*”, which is the core of the Second Commandment. In other words, Leviticus 17 and 18 provide the outlines of how one should love your neighbour as yourself and how to establish healthy families and communities. With this perspective, one can also understand why sodomy; intercourse with a menstruating woman or with members of the same gender; or sex with animals, would violate the overarching intent of building healthy relationships and families. These abominable practices were all, quite literally, dead ends – destroyers of families. Also, ever since the Garden of Eden, food, sex, and idolatry have consistently represented the greatest sources of temptation leading man into sin.

The terms of the covenant with Noah were not new. At least five of its principles already applied and were actually broken in the Garden of Eden. Adam and Eve did not break only one commandment, they broke 5 – (1) Idolatry: Obeying an authority other than God or one designated by God (i.e., Eve obeyed the serpent rather than Adam; Adam obeyed Eve rather than God); (2) Blasphemy: God was made out to be a liar and his character was questioned; (3) Bloodshed: By eating the fruit, Eve committed suicide; by offering the fruit to Adam, Eve committed homicide; by the snake prompting Eve, an animal killed a human; (4) Theft: It was God’s fruit which they ate unlawfully; (5) Establishing courts of Justice, i.e., pursuing justice, justly: The process of justice demands that the accused be afforded a hearing – God was not given a hearing; the action of eating the fruit by Eve was based on the presumption that God was guilty of lying to Adam, without hearing His “version” of the story. This goes to show that the Noachide Laws were actually a refinement of the pre-existing covenant boundaries already established in the Garden. Impure sexuality is not defined explicitly in the Garden, although there are subtleties linking the interactions with the serpent and the forbidden fruit to illicit sexual unions. More specifically, there is some uncertainty as to whether Adam and Eve actually obeyed the commandment to bring forth children whilst still in the Garden of Eden. Expressed as a positive commandment ‘to be fruitful and multiply’, basic sexual purity demands sexual activity appropriate for establishing families. By implication this therefore forbids homosexuality, sex during menstruation (as a form of contraception), incest (indirectly) and bestiality. All of this is captured in the Gen 2:24 verse: “leaving father and mother” (i.e., not incest and sex with immediate family); “and clinging to your wife” (i.e., not a homosexual partner); and “becoming one flesh” (i.e., not joining oneself to animals).

However, when reading **Revelation 2:20-23**, it is obvious that they provoke God's judgment on the New Covenant Church³² and this is stated clearly.

But, how does all this relate to ghosts, demons and evil spirits?

The relevance is as follows: The impression from Scripture is that when the boundaries of God's terms of Covenant are violated, the transgressors make themselves and those associated with them, vulnerable to spiritual influences and -parasites while they are still alive.

In addition, it seems that if they "die in their sins", they may become or produce spiritual parasitic entities themselves, as will be supported from Scripture later. Still, the heart of the matter is not an emphasis on the consequences of breaking, but rather the importance of keeping, the Covenants of God -- especially as a Believer.

³² **MSWV**: The decree issued by the Jerusalem council has never been rescinded, changed or challenged. Believers often quote Romans 8:1-2: "*Therefore, there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus.*" By this they believe that once they are in Christ, their actions or intentions – no matter what they are – have no further impact on their lives. This is simply not true; the *effects of sin* are the same as they were in the Old Testament. We still need to recognize, repent and willingly turn away from evil practices. The belief that we are not required to do so is known as *the doctrine of Balaam*, or of the *doctrine of the Nicolaitians*, as it appears in Revelation 2. Balaam, an ancient sorcerer, was asked by the king of Moab, Balak, to curse the Israelites. For most people the most memorable parts of the story are the talking donkey and Balaam's failure to curse, and instead ending up blessing, Israel. What is overlooked is that Balaam, still trying to comply with Balak's request, eventually taught Balak how to tempt Israel into violating God's covenant, so that they would bring a curse on themselves! This is not an original idea. It dates back to the Garden of Eden: After being tempted by our desires and then yielding to them, we are subsequently accused for our actions and become vulnerable to oppression. The relevance to the Modern Church is firmly established in Revelation 2: The glorified Christ, in his appearance to the apostle John, singles out three churches on the issue of the doctrine of the Nicolaitians: Ephesus is praised for condemning it; Pergamos is challenged for tolerating it; and Thiatira is rebuked for living it and warned about its stern consequences: "*Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not. Behold, I will cast her into a [death] bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation [suffering], except they repent of their deeds. And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works*". Rev 2:20-23 KJV. It is therefore made quite plain that violations of the apostolic decree of Acts 15 provoke God's judgment on the Church. Therefore, **by accepting individuals as members of the Church, when they are known to be living in active violation of the decree of Acts 15 (and by inference Leviticus 17-18), puts both the Church and the individuals themselves at great risk.** This is not a matter of prejudice, it is a matter of protection – for the sake of both parties – to exclude such individuals from fellowship until they choose, and are able, to comply.

This is also why participating in Holy Communion (modeled after the Peshach Seder and already extended to 'the stranger who dwells amongst you' in **Numbers 9:14**), without rightfully judging ourselves, is considered potentially harmful.

We see this illustrated by Judas: When he ate the bread Jesus gave him, while he knew in his heart that he had already betrayed his covenant of loyalty to Him, *satan entered him* (**John 13:27**) and he became the *son of perdition*.

Conversely, confirming a Covenantal relationship with Jesus Christ regularly, after appropriate reflection and repentance, is considered absolutely essential and life-giving.

SO WHAT ARE GHOSTS, DEMONS & EVIL SPIRITS?

Before providing more details from Scripture, I want to share some of the tools that have helped me to tease out certain ambiguities and to uncover important associations:

- Jeff Benner has produced an invaluable **Ancient Hebrew Lexicon of the Bible** that tabulates Hebrew words in the Bible according to their common word stem (<http://www.ancient-hebrew.org/bookstore/e-books/ahlb.pdf>).
- The benefit of this approach is that it establishes the intrinsic associations between various physical and abstract concepts³³.

³³ Benner, J. A. (2005). *Ancient Hebrew lexicon of the Bible*. College Station, TX: Virtual Bookworm. To demonstrate how this works, and to contrast what this approach adds to the more 'classic' word study methods (e.g., using a Strong's Concordance), consider the word for spirit: **rûach (H7307)**. The Strong's Concordance (e-Sword 2014) states: "**From H7306; wind; by resemblance breath, that is, a sensible (or even violent) exhalation; figuratively life, anger, unsubstantiality; by extension a region of the sky; by resemblance spirit, but only of a rational being (including its expression and functions): - air, anger, blast, breath, X cool, courage, mind, X quarter, X side, spirit ([ual]), tempest, X vain, ([whirl-]) wind (-y)**". Benner's *Ancient Etymological Lexicon*, on the other hand, collates all Biblical Hebrew words according to their common word stem. This allows for the discovery of essential and functional associations as it is applied in different ways. In the case of "ruach", the parent root makes up part of certain verbs, as in "**Travel, Tread, Trade, Ride, Smell**"; and certain nouns such as "**Path, Wind, Moon, Aroma, Dawn, Merchandise, Chariot, Caravan, Millstone, Winnowing Fork**". [Also, the] **symbols making up the word are the pictographic letter 'ר' [which] is a picture of the head of a man; [and] 'ו' [which] is a picture of wall that separates the inside from the outside. Combined these mean "man outside"**. This has a very literal connotation that can be applied to abstract concepts: i.e., **[...the] responsibilities of the nomad outside of the tent include the feeding, watering and caring for the livestock. Livestock are healthier and more productive when on a routine, therefore the man follows a routine or "a prescribed path" each day when caring for his livestock.**" The essential characteristic of 'ruach' therefore lies in **following a prescribed and faithful path**. This is the 'behavioural' or 'core' associative link between the various concepts of spirit and path, wind, moon, aroma, dawn, etc.: they all follow a repetitive, consistent, faithful path. 'Spiritual Faith' is therefore consistent, unwavering faith. Unlike our more 'modern' understanding of being 'spirited' or 'charismatic', the intrinsic function and trait of the 'spirit' is **predictable faithfulness**, not sudden impulse and wanton disorder. The latter are actually features of evil or unclean spirits. This understanding is therefore an invaluable for the 'discerning the spirits'.

- A significant challenge, when exploring the issues of ghosts, demons and evil spirits, is dealing with the artificial divide created by the shift from Old Testament Hebrew to New Testament Greek³⁴.
- A tool called the **Lexical Concordance of the** approach is that it establishes the intrinsic associations between various physical and abstract concepts
- A significant challenge, when exploring the issues of ghosts, demons and evil spirits, is dealing with the artificial divide created by the shift from Old Testament Hebrew to New Testament Greek. A tool called the **Lexical Concordance of the Apostolic Bible Polyglot** (<http://apostolicbible.com/text.htm>) allows a search backwards: i.e., a Greek New Testament word can be traced back to where and how it was used, in context, by scholarly rabbis when creating the earliest Greek translation of the Old Testament Hebrew (the Septuagint), in order to communicate a particular Hebrew concept.
- Other resources included the popular software, **e-Sword** (<http://www.e-sword.net>) and an Interlinear Hebrew-English Bible module for the software – **WordSearch Bible** (<https://www.wordsearchbible.com/> and <https://www.wordsearchbible.com/products/23586>). This has proved to be particularly useful in several complicated passages.

With that background, there are several insights that may be derived using Benner's Lexicon to examine the Hebrew word translated most consistently as '**ghost**' – Strong's number: **H7496**:

The parent root word, from which H7496 is derived, is made up of the two Hebrew letters – resh and pey – which, pictographically (i.e., intrinsically), means person's mouth with the theme being a man open or a man exposed.

This resh pey parent root is used to form a number of words, including 'medicine'; 'weak'; 'pulverize' (as in medicine); 'family idol' (teraphim); 'heal' (raphe); 'giants'; and, finally, also '**the dead**' (**rephaim**).

A specific Scriptural reference in which there seems to be clear differentiation between the concepts of 'ghosts' and 'demons' is found in **Isaiah 14:9-12**:

³⁴VanderPool, C. L. (1995). *Lexical Concordance of the Apostolic Bible Polyglot*. Newport: Apostolic Press. Many scholars have attempted to capture and communicate the idiomatic and axiomatic content of Jesus' words in Greek by exploring their original socio-cultural Hebrew-Aramaic meanings. However, this does not solve the difficulties when moving from individual word concepts in Hebrew vs. Greek. Hebrew is action-based and develops abstract concepts from, usually, a very literal and foundational action-based root. Greek is more noun-based and communicates nuances of meaning using different words. The challenge therefore lies in bridging the choice of a specific Greek word, to an equivalent Hebrew word, as it was used in its specific context in the original Hebrew Scriptures. Without getting too technical: there is a well-known Greek translation of the Hebrew Old Testament, called the Septuagint in commemoration of the 70 Jewish rabbis who completed the work allegedly two millennia ago. In spite of various criticisms about its validity, sanctity and accuracy, it provides many insights and serves as an invaluable Judeo-Christian bridge between Biblical Hebrew and Biblical Greek. This has been made very accessible by means of the Apostolic Bible Polyglot.

With specific reference to satan, Isaiah writes that Hell (or Sheol) is stirred for him; and this stirs up the departed spirits (**H7496**), also translated as “the dead” or “ghosts”), even the ‘he-goats’ (**H6260**, also translated as “chief ones” or “leaders”) of the earth³⁵. The specific distinction between the ‘goat’ and ‘ghost’ entities will be explored in detail in later sections.

³⁵ The latter establishes a Scriptural association between goats and demons, but it does not explain specifically what the departed spirits (or ghosts) are and how they may affect us. This is discussed in later sections of this work.

DEFINITIONS

Next, I would like to define some terms, as I will be using them³⁶:

Spirit vs. Soul

The concepts of spirit and soul are complex and multi-faceted³⁷. As such, it falls outside the scope of this work to offer a detailed review. The focus is on establishing basic Biblical etymological foundations for the purpose of differentiating (or showing the difficulties in differentiating) between the potential states of soul and spirit after death.

The familiar binary distinction between spirit and soul is based largely on the New Testament terms employed by Paul³⁸. It also says in **Hebrews 4:12-13** (ESV):

*“For the word of God is living and active, sharper than any two-edged sword, **piercing to the division of soul and of spirit**, of joints and of marrow, and discerning the thoughts and intentions of the heart. And no creature is hidden from his sight, but all are naked and exposed to the eyes of him to whom we must give account”.*

However, the division of **“soul and spirit”** by the **“Word of God”** does not refer primarily to the New Testament – much of which did not even exist at the time.

Rather, it refers to the Old Testament Hebrew Scriptures that were already familiar to the audience.

³⁶ There is a lot of ambiguity in this area, and – as is often the case in such situations – there are very strong opinions resulting in vehement disagreements. Sadly, there is often an inverse relationship between the strength of opinion and the actual evidence that supports it. This tends to discourage dialogue and thwarts efforts to examine evidence objectively or to resolve the true basis of any differences of opinion. With this in mind, I am introducing these definitions with a certain amount of hesitation. I realize that whenever we set definitions we run a calculated risk: If my definitions are different to yours, these differences may present a communication barrier. On the other hand, without any clarification of the terms, we may be left without a common understanding. So, I have opted for providing a very basic functional glossary. If you disagree you are welcome to challenge or propose modifications to the definitions, but kindly continue reading and engage in discussion.

³⁷ In life, their functions are integrated and tied to our bodies. Upon death of the body, there is great divergence of opinion in terms of their respective destinies, and the prospects of continued existence, reassembly or reconstitution. In addition to various secular, scientific, religious, and mystical definitions for these concepts, there is the influence of language: Certain terms and concepts – like mind – do not exist in many languages. Also, terms like ‘heart’ and ‘soul’ may include more than one concept; this has added to the complexity.

³⁸ 1Th 5:23 (ESV) *Now may the God of peace himself sanctify you completely, and may your whole **spirit** and **soul** and **body** be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.*

The Hebrew Scriptures contain at least seven words related to the non-physical or non-material aspects of man^{39 40}:

- ➔ **Chayah (H2421) – Gen 5:3** – translated as “life” or “lived” – responsible for continued earthly existence. This word is also used to refer to living animals.
- ➔ **From Benner⁴¹: Child Root: To be alive and continue alive. Have life within. The revival of life gained from food or other necessity.**
- ➔ **Nephesh (H5315) – Gen 1:24** – translated as “soul” or “life” or “person”; also known as the animal soul and responsible for “appetitive awareness”. This word is also applied to living animals.
- ➔ **From Benner: Adopted Root: The whole of a person, ‘god’ or creature including the body, breath and mind.**
- ➔ **Ruach (H7307) – Gen 6:17** – translated as God’s “Spirit”, human “spirit” or other “spirit” – is responsible for “emotional awareness” in man. This word is applied to God, spiritual entities and man.
- ➔ **From Benner: Child Root: The Hebrew nomads were very familiar with the wind patterns, as they would follow a prescribed path indicating the coming season. From this word comes the idea of breath as it is the wind of man which also follows a prescribed path of inhaling and exhaling.**
- ➔ **Neshoma (H5397) – Gen 2:7** – translated as “breath” – responsible for “intellect”. This word is applied uniquely to man as having been given by God: the Lamp of the LORD – **Proverbs 20:27**.
- ➔ **From Benner: Child Root: The breath of man or God. The breath is more than the exchange of air but the character of the individual.**
- ➔ **Yechidah (H3173) – Gen 22:2** – translated as “only” or “beloved” or “united” – encapsulates a seeming contradiction between similarity in essence but a distinctly separate identity or expression of it.
- ➔ **From Benner: Child Root: A uniting together. All things are a unity with something else (one man is a unity of body, breath and mind, one family is a unity of father, mother and children, one tree is a unity of trunk, branches and leaves, one forest is a unity of trees).**
- ➔ **Lev – (H3820) – Gen 6:5** – translated as “heart” – is responsible for the core attitude of a person.
- ➔ **From Benner: Parent Root: The pictograph ל is a picture of the shepherd staff representing authority, the ו is a picture of a tent representing what is inside. Combined these mean “authority inside”. The consciousness of man is seen as coming from deep inside the chest, the heart. Thirst as an Inside desire for water.**
- ➔ **Tselem – (H6754) – Gen 1:26** – translated as “image” or likeness.

³⁹ Kottek, S. (2003). Medicine in Ancient Hebrew and Jewish Cultures. In H. Selin (Ed.), *Medicine Across Cultures* (Vol. 3, pp. 305-324): Springer Netherlands.

⁴⁰ Winkler, G. (1981). *Dybbuk*. USA: Judaica Press.

⁴¹ Benner, J. A. (2005). *Ancient Hebrew lexicon of the Bible*. College Station, TX: Virtual Bookworm.

- ➔ **From Benner:** *Adopted Root -- An outline or representation of an original as a shadow is the outline of the original.*

The reason for pointing these out is because the Greek classification suggests that the distinction between spirit and soul is simple, when it is not.

For this reason, the concept of human **spirit-soul** is applied specifically with reference to 'ghosts', because they seem to display parts or combinations of the Hebrew concepts at different times⁴².

Resuscitation

This is a term used to indicate any effort to preserve or restore life in someone who is either on the verge of dying or no longer has a pulse / or signs of breathing - which is also called clinical death. Resuscitation may be successful or unsuccessful. If successful, mortal life returns; if not, biological or irreversible death follows.

Resurrection

This term implies the reversal of biological death⁴³: It is recorded in the Bible amongst the works of Elijah and Elisha (**1 Kings 17:17; 2 Kings 4:32 and 2 Kings 13:21**).

⁴² **MSWV**: It is my opinion that the boundary-lines between soul and spirit are not as clear as popular doctrine suggests. There is potential overlap between psychic and spiritual phenomena although their aetiologies may be very different.

⁴³ Clinical death is reclassified as biological death once it is considered irreversible. The commencement of biological death may range from 4 to 80 minutes (based on current evidence), but the exact time-frame is still subject to discussion. 'Biological death' is meant to imply irreversible cell death. However, several flaws appear when enforcing a binary classification of death, i.e., clinical vs. biological death, such as in a case of successful resuscitation of a clinically dead individual who shows signs of permanent brain damage. Such individuals display features of both clinical and biological death. So additional considerations apply, such as likely long-term survival and ultimate quality of life. These are the products of experience and judgement rather than certainty... Rigid time-related definitions also fail in the case of low body temperature or drug overdose situations. In addition, there is the so-called Lazarus Phenomenon – which is related to the Return of Spontaneous Circulation (ROSC) after clinical death. This remains an area of debate. Most medical authorities have now agreed that 10 minutes should be the minimum period of continued medical observation after all resuscitation efforts have been called off in a case of clinical death. The practical implication is therefore that an individual who has been subjected to all reasonable measures of resuscitation (including normalization of body temperature and the use of appropriate medical and electrical interventions), without any evidence of recovery of breathing or heartbeat, may be removed from monitors and sent to the morgue after 10 additional minutes of medical observation.

Science struggles to rationalize a reversal of sustained clinical death after a prolonged period although the margins are blurry: Permanent damage (i.e., partial death) is anticipated after only 4 minutes of clinical death at normal body temperature, whereas (to my knowledge, and at the time of writing) no case of complete, lasting and functional recovery has been documented beyond 80 minutes of verified clinical death⁴⁴.

This was not the understanding in antiquity, however: there was a prevailing belief, which still applied at the time of Jesus, that the soul or spirit of a deceased individual remained in close association with the body for at least three days after death and burial; as such, resurrection was possible during this time⁴⁵.

Unlike Jesus, however, Lazarus was not raised as an eternal or glorified body – he was still subject to earthly death. Scripture therefore differentiates between two types of resurrection: **resurrection** [to this life] and a “**better**” [future / eternal] **resurrection** as described in **Hebrews 11:35**.

Reincarnation

In its generic use, reincarnation is meant to describe a phenomenon or belief in which the surviving human spirit-soul of a deceased individual begins a new life in a new body. It overlaps with the concept of transmigration of the soul to the extent that the latter is limited to transfer of the soul from a deceased body to an existing, living person.

The unqualified term ‘reincarnation’ is controversial because it does not differentiate clearly between soul transmigration and a ‘true recycling’ of spirit-souls into new, ‘unoccupied’ bodies⁴⁶. For this reason, I have opted to employ the modifiers – true or functional – as in:

☞ True Reincarnation, vs.

☞ Functional Reincarnation.

⁴⁴ It is common knowledge that, under normal conditions, there is only a very limited time (about 3 minutes at normal body temperature) in which complete reversal of clinical death may be achieved without significant brain damage. The longest officially reported case of clinical death, in which resuscitation provided full recovery, is eighty minutes: In 1999, a 29-year-old Swedish woman – Anna Bågenholm – spent eighty minutes trapped under ice; she survived with a full recovery, but her measured core body temperature was 13.7°C.

⁴⁵ Unlike the Egyptian embalming practices, Hebrew burials were recognized by the application of fragrant spices on the undisturbed body in the hope that these might invite the soul to return. Tombs were also created with an escape hole for the soul if the spices failed in their task. For this reason, Jesus waited more than three days before raising Lazarus and Martha warned – “*he stinketh*”, meaning that the spices had failed.

⁴⁶ This is not merely a matter of semantics. The fundamental distinction between the proposed concepts of **True** vs. **Functional Reincarnation** – **TR** vs. **FR** – is as follows: In the case of **TR**, the individual would not have been a complete and viable human entity without the spirit / soul joining it. In the case of **FR**, there is a pre-existing, viable functional human host, to which an additional spirit-soul component is added or joins itself at any time-point *after* conception, even if this is still in the womb, after birth, or later in life.

True Reincarnation (TR)

TR is reserved specifically for the following theoretical situation: where

- (1) a single, viable, human, spirit-soul-body assembly is formed;
- (2) at the moment of conception; and
- (3) wherein the spirit-soul components are derived from a,
- (4) previously living human individual (if born), or possibly from an unborn embryo or fetus; but
- (5) without any co-existence or time overlap between the 'previous life' and the 'reincarnation'; thereby
- (6) establishing a 'truly recycled' spirit-soul entity as the,
- (7) only, original and 'legal' occupant of the physical body (if born) or the body to be born (i.e., while still in the womb).

I realize this is a bit long-winded. It also makes the concept complicated and it is practically impossible to verify or refute whether TR actually exists as I have defined it.

But that is not the point; this is: if TR is excluded from the greater concept of reincarnation – i.e., by using the word 'functional' reincarnation – it is no longer incompatible with Judeo-Christian doctrine and facilitates acceptance of the large body of scientific evidence that is in support of it⁴⁷.

Functional Reincarnation (FR)

Any multiple- or partial human spirit-soul addition to a physical entity is designated as a subset of **Functional Reincarnation**⁴⁸.

⁴⁷ What constitutes legal 'ownership' might be subject to debate, but my chosen definition for **TR** is limited strictly to *single, original human spirit-soul occupancy of a viable physical (cellular) human entity formed at the moment of conception*. There is no proof that this has ever occurred. However, most objections to the entire concept of reincarnation are based on a rejection of **TR**. In practice, 'reincarnation' is more consistent with partial- or full human spirit-soul transmigration and even oppression and possession of an *existing* human host. To draw the boundaries for greater clarity and acceptance, I have chosen to add the term 'functional'.

⁴⁸ My goal by introducing the term, **Functional Reincarnation (FR)** is to: (1) *overcome the insurmountable theological objections to the concept of TR*; (2) serve as 'umbrella' term for phenomena associated with the transmission of human spirit-soul residua, thereby making allowance for areas of disagreement for the benefit of discussion and research; (3) provide a *neutral terminological bridge* to a large body of scientific literature; and (4) differentiate *human spirit-soul residua* from other spiritual phenomena.

FR therefore also includes any situation that may arise, after the moment of conception, in which the 'original' single human spirit-soul entity may be displaced, replaced, or joined by another residual human spirit-soul entity or component, associated with a deceased human individual - even if this were to occur in the womb, i.e., prior to birth⁴⁹.

States of being

For reasons that will soon become clear, it is helpful to define and contrast several *states of being* that are used widely in Scripture, as they apply specifically to *humans*⁵⁰.

- **Clean** – in its simplest form, reflects a state of being alive, vibrant and unrestricted.
- **Righteous** – implies being steadfast and principled.
- **Good** – implies being functional according to original design; whereas
- **Holy** – denotes special, unified or singled out for a specific purpose

Conversely –

- **Unclean** – is a state of being weak, sick, infirm, powerless or actually dead.
- **Unrighteous** – means acting wrongfully or being unprincipled – lawless.
- **Evil** – is a state of dysfunction and ongoing disturbance; and
- **Unholy** – applies to something that is commonplace, unappreciated, and even dispersed.

⁴⁹ Defined this way, the term **FR** is less controversial than the generic term '*reincarnation*' is: **FR** makes allowance for, and may be applied to, a much wider range of situations or phenomena including soul transmigration, 'past life' memories, 'non-genetic' inherited human traits, alien human spirits, dead human spirits, demonic soul copies, and human spirit possession. The emphasis on *human* is very deliberate, however: **FR should not be used to describe situations where the spiritual influences are not / are not presumed to be of human origin.** Examples of non-FR-related influences and phenomena include channelling of non-human spirits or deities; non-human spirits of divination; and animal- or other non-human forms of spirit possession. However, **FR can be used to describe the concept of *human spirit-soul entities joining animals*.** Technically speaking, transfer of human spirit-soul entities to plants and inanimate objects should be excluded when using the term 'carnation', meaning – 'flesh'. Defining and elaborating all of these latter possibilities falls outside the scope of this work, but should be part of future discussions.

⁵⁰ This work does not permit an exhaustive exegesis of these terms. Nevertheless, it is vital to have some foundational understanding of them, since there appears to be a direct relationship between the ensuing behaviour or manifestation and these eight states of being. As such, the spiritual influences that are being considered also promote or oppose, these eight states of being. This perspective assists greatly in clarifying the use of specific words in Scripture (e.g., evil spirit; unclean spirit; demon; or devil); the focus is not the hierarchy as much as the anarchy, i.e., the objective is to explain the *effects* on the human subject primarily rather than the *origins* of the influencing spirit or spirit-soul entity.

This framework is helpful in that it allows appreciation of the consequences of either being in these states or being subjected to spiritual influences that produce them, e.g., unclean spirits; evil spirits; etc.

By exploring the patterns throughout Scripture (for which specific examples will be provided later), it can be seen that:

- (1) **uncleanness**, leads to loss of power, health or life;
- (2) **unrighteousness**, produces a loss of authority **leading to** rebellion;
- (3) **evil**, leads to loss of core function; and
- (4) **unholiness**, to loss of appreciation, value or relationship. As such, an unclean spirit would be expected to produce a loss of power or life; and an evil spirit would produce dysfunction, etc⁵¹.

Ghosts

By nearly universally accepted definition, ghosts are the 'visible' residual traces of dead human souls or -spirit-souls either seen by the naked eye, or rendered visible by means of equipment (e.g., photographic equipment)⁵². Simplistically speaking, ghosts usually exhibit behaviours consistent with 'normal' human activities and interests, whereas spirits interfere with human activities and abilities⁵³.

⁵¹ **MSWV**: As for the *unrighteous* and *unholy* spiritual influences: we can infer, indirectly, that just like pursuing *true righteousness* (i.e., rather than 'self-righteousness') builds and establishes God's authority, an unrighteousness spirit would do the reverse. Similarly, by pursuing *true holiness* (rather than 'false piety' or self-imposed 'ascetism' or 'monasticism'), the effect should be greater unity and intimacy whereas an 'unholy spirit' would produce the reverse.

⁵² <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ghost>

⁵³ In most case reports and descriptions associated with ghosts, the entities are preoccupied with basic human interests; these may include objects, human behaviours, places where they lived or worked, and people with whom their relationships were either good (including sworn loyalty and friendship, familial relationships and obsessional love) or bad (including extremes of hatred and vengeance). Spirits, on the other hand, are associated more with disturbances, interferences, movements of objects, and disruption of human function. The kinetic (i.e. moving of objects) experiences associated with séances and Ouija boards are more spirit-like than ghostlike.

Spirits

In general, the unqualified use of the word 'spirits' refers to invisible, non-physical entities or influences; they may be of human origin or not. The term 'human spirit' is usually reserved for designating the spirit of a living individual⁵⁴. Nature spirits would also fit into this category⁵⁵, as would all those listed under 'Other Spiritual Entities', below.

Demons

In the modern use of the word, 'demon' usually refers to a malevolent spiritual entity⁵⁶.

Other spiritual entities

Many other spiritual entities are mentioned in the Bible and other sacred texts. There are also fairly extensive secular sources on so-called paranormal phenomena⁵⁷.

These entities fall outside the central focus of this work, but **two categories** are listed briefly for purpose of clarification and differentiation:

1. Angels

Angelic beings include a hierarchy of non-terrestrial spiritual entities. Scripture tells that a third of the angels fell with satan, Lucifer or Hallel (**Rev 12:4**).

Lucifer is also contrasted with **Abaddon** or **Apollyon** (**Job 1:6 vs. 26:6; Rev 9:11**). Angelic beings are ranked in terms of their service and proximity to God vs. their interactions with Man.

⁵⁴ The concept of astral projection – which is a form of out of body experience (OBE) – suggests the ability of certain living individuals to project their spirit beyond the confines of their body. This is not considered a full teleportation of consciousness, and most individuals differentiate their sense of self in this dissociated state from the altered state of consciousness induced to achieve it. Astral projection is typically fairly short-lived and is not used interchangeably with the terms soul transmigration or **FR**.

⁵⁵ Colossians 2:8 & 2:20

⁵⁶ Most Christians associate the word 'demon' with Faustian images of hell. The original meaning of demon was much broader, however. It has its etymological origins in the Greek and Latin words for 'tide' or 'divide', and has been used to describe dead human souls, evil spirits, and even certain deities.

⁵⁷ <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Paranormal>

Best known from Scripture – in decreasing order of ranking – are archangels or **cherubim** (**Gen 3:24 & Ezekiel 10:1, etc.**); fire angels or seraphim (Isaiah 6:2); and interacting angels (i.e., those able to appear in human form) the **teraphim** (**Ezekiel 21:21; 1 Samuel 15:23**) which are also associated with **cleromancy**⁵⁸ and idolatry.

Man does not have authority over angels, nor are they to be worshipped (**1 Samuel 15:23: Revelation 22:8**).

Nevertheless, angels are said to be “ministering spirits sent out to serve for the sake of those who are to inherit salvation” **Hebrews 1:14**.

2. Nephilim

This term – meaning ‘fallen ones’ – is applied to the hybrid offspring of an illicit sexual union between the ‘sons of God’ and the ‘daughters of men’ (**Gen 6:4**).

Originally the Nephilim were described as mighty men, heroes, and men of renown. The association between ‘sons of God’ and angels is established in the apocryphal book of Enoch which is thought to be the source of the references in the New Testament letters of by Peter and Jude:

The angels responsible for this are described as now being in chains under darkness (**Jude 1:6; 2 Peter 2:4**).

The Nephilim are eventually referred to as *Anakim* (*Num 13:33*) who were **giants**⁵⁹.

⁵⁸ Cleromancy is a form of sortation or casting of lots. There are Godly and unGodly practices of lot casting described in the Bible. UnGodly applications are associated with teraphim and are a subset of idolatry. <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cleromancy>.

⁵⁹ “And there we saw the Nephilim (the sons of Anak, who come from the Nephilim), and we seemed to ourselves like grasshoppers, and so we seemed to them.” Num 13:33

There is a thematic link between the Nephilim and human ethnic groups originating from incestuous unions – **Deuteronomy 2 & 3**⁶⁰.

There is also much speculation about the spiritual and genetic impact of Gen 6:4 and the Nephilim progeny after their deaths⁶¹.

The popular Christian theological view is that ‘demons’ originated from the earth-bound spirit-soul **residua** of the Nephilim; this view has been adopted largely to the exclusion of deceased human spirits, which was not the case in the earlier years of Christianity. Judaism also holds a broader view on the origin of ‘demons’⁶².

Lastly, I want to **differentiate two different sets** of manifestations associated with disembodied spiritual entities:

Transcorporeal signs (TCS)

TCS represent the physical manifestation of a spiritual entity through, or by means of, a body.

⁶⁰ In Deuteronomy 2 & 3 there seems to be an association between the products of the illicit unions of Gen 6, the Rephaites (giants), and the products of human incest: (i.e., **Canaan** – from Ham and Noah’s wife cf. Gen 9:18 & 9:22 and **Moab** and **Ammon** – from the incest between Lot and his two daughters cf. Gen 19:36): the Rephaites (giants) are associated with the **Anakites** (Canaan), **Emites** (Moab) and **Zamzumites** (Ammon). Deu 2:11-3:30 (ESV): *And the LORD said unto me, Distress not the Moabites, neither contend with them in battle: for I will not give thee of their land for a possession; because I have given Ar unto the children of Lot for a possession. The Emims dwelt therein in times past, a people great, and many, and tall, as the Anakims; Which also were accounted giants, as the Anakims; but the Moabites call them Emims... And when thou comest nigh over against the children of Ammon, distress them not, nor meddle with them: for I will not give thee of the land of the children of Ammon any possession; because I have given it unto the children of Lot for a possession. (That also was accounted a land of giants: giants dwelt therein in old time; and the Ammonites call them Zamzummims; A people great, and many, and tall, as the Anakims; but the LORD destroyed them before them; and they succeeded them, and dwelt in their stead...All the cities of the plain, and all Gilead, and all Bashan, unto Salchah and Edrei, cities of the kingdom of Og in Bashan. For only Og king of Bashan remained of the remnant of giants; behold, his bedstead was a bedstead of iron; is it not in Rabbath of the children of Ammon? Nine cubits was the length thereof, and four cubits the breadth of it, after the cubit of a man. Deut 2:9-3:11 ESV. One cubit = 45cm; nine cubits = 4 meters.*

⁶¹ Recent Whole-genome sequencing are pointing towards possible unique genetic contributions to so-called ‘Anatomically Modern Humans’. These findings may assist in tracing the genetic fingerprints of these admixtures. (1) Veeramah, K. R., & Hammer, M. F. (2014). The impact of whole-genome sequencing on the reconstruction of human population history. *Nat Rev Genet*, 15(3), 149-162. (2) Tishkoff, S. A., & Williams, S. M. (2002). Genetic analysis of African populations: human evolution and complex disease. *Nat Rev Genet*, 3(8), 611-621.

⁶² <http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/5085-demonology>

Transcorporeal signs of ghosts are part of the phenomena attributed to **FR** and its associated concepts.

When other spirits are manifesting, the term FR cannot be used, such as may be the case when channelling or manifesting:

non-human spirits or deities;

non-human spirits of divination;

and animal- or other non-human forms of spirit possession:

All FR is a TCS, but all TCS' are not FR.

Extracorporeal signs (ECS)

ECS represent manifestations separate from, or outside the human body, and are perceived through the physical senses.

BIBLICAL REFERENCES

This section explores the Scriptural distinction between ghosts, demons and evil spirits. To start off, I would like to focus on some Biblical references to human spirit-soul residua or ghosts and the practices related to them.

In **Deuteronomy 18:9-12**, there is a detailed list of forbidden occultic practices⁶³. Three of these practices relate specifically to ghosts: mediums, necromancers, and one who enquires of the dead (abbreviated collectively as **MNE** in the text).

- * **Mediums** – allow dead spirit-souls to speak and manifest through them;
- * **Necromancers** – serve, feed, or even worship the dead; whereas –
- * **One who enquires of the dead** – seeks secret or forbidden knowledge from those who have departed.

⁶³ *"When you come into the land that the LORD your God is giving you, you shall not learn to follow the abominable practices of those nations. There shall not be found among you anyone who **burns his son or his daughter as an offering**, anyone who **practices divination or tells fortunes or interprets omens**, or **a sorcerer or a charmer** or **a medium** or **a necromancer** or **one who inquires of the dead**, for whoever does these things is an abomination to the LORD". Deu 18:9-12 ESV.*

The narrative of king Saul and the witch of Endor provides a detailed example of MNE and also provides Biblical evidence for ghosts⁶⁴ : Although expressly forbidden, the validity of MNE is supported by the witch becoming aware of Saul's true identity and by her accurate description of Samuel.

In addition, the prophecy Samuel gives is fulfilled the next day. Moreover, Samuel's statement "you and your sons shall be with me" clearly implies that there is a place where the ghosts are assembled, including Samuel's, and that this was where Saul and his sons would be going upon their deaths. It is also reasonable to conclude that it was possible to summon Samuel's ghost from there.

⁶⁴ 1 Sam 28:8-21: "So Saul disguised himself... And they came to the woman by night. And he said, **"Divine for me by a spirit and bring up for me whomever I shall name to you."** The woman said to him, "Surely you know what Saul has done, how he has cut off **the mediums and the necromancers** from the land. Why then are you laying a trap for my life to bring about my death?" But Saul swore to her by the LORD, "As the LORD lives, no punishment shall come upon you for this thing." Then the woman said, **"Whom shall I bring up for you?"** He said, "Bring up Samuel for me." **When the woman saw Samuel**, she cried out with a loud voice. And the woman said to Saul, "Why have you deceived me? You are Saul." The king said to her, "Do not be afraid. What do you see?" And the woman said to Saul, **"I see a God coming up out of the earth."** He said to her, "What is his appearance?" And she said, **"An old man is coming up, and he is wrapped in a robe."** And Saul knew that it was Samuel, and he bowed with his face to the ground and paid homage. Then Samuel said to Saul, "Why have you disturbed me by bringing me up?" Saul answered, "I am in great distress, for the Philistines are warring against me, and God has turned away from me and answers me no more, either by prophets or by dreams. Therefore I have summoned you to tell me what I shall do." And Samuel said, "Why then do you ask me, since the LORD has turned from you and become your enemy? The LORD has done to you as he spoke by me, for the LORD has torn the kingdom out of your hand and given it to your neighbor, David. Because you did not obey the voice of the LORD and did not carry out his fierce wrath against Amalek, therefore the LORD has done this thing to you this day. Moreover, the LORD will give Israel also with you into the hand of the Philistines, **and tomorrow you and your sons shall be with me.** The LORD will give the army of Israel also into the hand of the Philistines." Then Saul fell at once full length on the ground, filled with fear because of the words of Samuel. And there was no strength in him, for he had eaten nothing all day and all night. And the woman came to Saul, and when she saw that he was terrified, she said to him, "Behold, your servant has obeyed you. I have taken my life in my hand and have listened to what you have said to me." 1Sa 28:8-21 ESV.

Therefore, to deny the potential for human spirit-souls to return or remain on earth under certain conditions would actually be a contradiction of Scripture⁶⁵.

Along the same vein, the book of Isaiah states that the earth will cast out the 'departed spirits' and that some will be punished and destroyed whereas others will be brought back to life in new bodies – including Isaiah himself and – in the prophetic context – the Messiah! As such, it clearly recognizes the departed spirits exist and makes it clear that they are associated with deceased humans, not with other spiritual entities⁶⁶.

The encounter that Jesus has with the Gadarene demoniac in Mark 5 and Luke 8 has strong suggestions that this man was associated with the spirit-souls of dead people. It makes the point of saying that he lived amongst the tombs and not in houses.

⁶⁵ There are various opinions about whether the dimensions or location of Hell (or Sheol, Gei-Hinnom or Hades) and Heaven (or Paradise) changed upon the resurrection of Jesus Christ when *"...the graves were opened, and the bodies of many holy people who had died were raised to life; and after Yeshua rose, they came out of the graves and went into the holy city, where many people saw them."* Mat 27:52-53 CJB. It is also beyond the scope of this work to consider all the implications of Christ's exchanges with the *imprisoned spirits* after his crucifixion (1 Pe 3:19). Nevertheless, the practices associated with the witch of Endor (i.e., MNE) are still in full operation today: All over the world mediums continue summoning the dead and communicating their words. Many of these communications have been confirmed as reliable beyond chance; some have even been employed to assist in forensic investigations and have met with indisputable success. By stating this I do not mean to condone the practice of MNE. However, forbidding the practice, as Scripture does, serves rather to affirm than to negate its *validity*. Others argue, based on Jesus' *parable of the poor man, Lazarus* (Luk 16), that Hell (Sheol, Gei-Hinnom or Hades) and Paradise are divided and that the dead cannot cross over between them. By extension, an assumption is made that return to earth is therefore impossible, but this premise is not supported by the actual text: Abraham's words are: *'If they do not hear Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be convinced if someone should rise from the dead.'* Luk 16:31 ESV. As such, Abraham's words are actually a prophetic rebuke of the disbelief that would follow Jesus' resurrection; his words do not preclude the possibility of the dead returning to earth from either Hell or Paradise. In fact, Jesus promised the thief on the cross: *"Truly, I say to you, today you will be with me in Paradise."* Luk 23:43 ESV; therefore, this implies that Jesus himself must have returned from Paradise to be resurrected. Moreover, even before his own resurrection, Jesus already demonstrated *by raising his friend, Lazarus from the dead after more than three days* (Joh 11), that his spirit-soul had either remained earthbound or had returned from wherever it was. The central argument, though, is that Scripture actually supports, and does not refute, the concept of ghosts as well as the possibility that deceased human spirit-souls may return to earth or remain there under certain conditions.

⁶⁶ *The dead will not live again, the ghosts will not rise again; for you punished and destroyed them, wiped out all memory of them... [but] Your dead will live, my corpse will rise; awake and sing, you who dwell in the dust; for your dew is like the morning dew, and the earth will bring the ghosts to life. Isa 26:14 vs.19 CJB*

There is some ambiguity because of variations in the use of the term 'unclean spirit', 'demon' and 'demons' in the parallel Gospel accounts: In Mark, there is a fairly consistent reference to an **unclean** or **dead spirit** or **-spirits** causing the person's insanity⁶⁷.

Luke, on the other hand, refers to a demon (singular), demons (plural) and to an unclean spirit almost interchangeably⁶⁸. Jesus seems to be addressing the unclean spirit primarily, however.

Uncleanness is also associated with pigs in particular as well as 'swarming' behaviour in general ; this association is strengthened by the casting out of the unclean spirit(s) from the man into the pigs, which then 'swarm' and plunge into the sea. When asked for his name, the strongman responds: "my name is Legion"... "we are many".⁶⁹ This indicates that the person was harbouring more than one spiritual parasite; it does not specify that they were all of the same kind?⁷⁰

⁶⁷ *As soon as he disembarked, a man with an unclean spirit came out of the burial caves to meet him. He lived in the burial caves; and no one could keep him tied up, not even with a chain... Night and day he wandered among the graves and through the hills, howling and gashing himself with stones. Seeing Yeshua from a distance, he ran and fell on his knees in front of him and screamed at the top of his voice, "What do you want with me, Yeshua, Son of God Ha'Elyon? I implore you in God's name! Don't torture me!" For Yeshua had already begun saying to him, "Unclean spirit, come out of this man!" Yeshua asked him, "What's your name?" "My name is Legion," he answered, "there are so many of us"; and he kept begging Yeshua not to send them out of that region. Now there was a large herd of pigs feeding near the hill, and the unclean spirits begged him, "Send us to the pigs, so we can go into them." Mar 5:2-12 CJB*

⁶⁸ **Lev 11:7, 29, 41, 42, 43.**

⁶⁹ *"...a man from the town who had demons came to meet him...he had not worn clothes; and he lived, **not in a house, but in the burial caves**. Catching sight of Yeshua, he screamed, fell down in front of him and yelled, "Yeshua! Son of God Ha'Elyon! What do you want with me? I beg you, don't torture me!" For Yeshua had ordered the unclean spirit to come out of the man. It had often taken hold of him... [and] he had ...been driven by the demon into the desert. Yeshua asked him, "What is your name?" "**Legion**," he said, because many demons had entered him. They begged Yeshua not to order them to go off into the Bottomless Pit...the demons begged him ...[s]o he gave them permission. [They]...came out of the man and entered the pigs, whereupon the herd rushed down the hillside into the lake and were drowned...[And] the people...found the man out of whom the demons had gone, sitting — dressed and in his right mind — at the feet of Yeshua; and they were frightened. Those who had seen it told how the formerly demonized man had been delivered...they had been seized with great fear...The man from whom the demons had gone out...went away proclaiming...how much Yeshua had done for him." Luk 8:27-39 CJB*

⁷⁰ *"When the **unclean spirit** has gone out of a person, it passes through waterless places seeking rest, but finds none. Then it says, 'I will return to my house from which I came.' And when it comes, it finds the house empty, swept, and put in order. Then it goes and brings with it **seven other spirits more evil than itself**, and they enter and dwell there, and the last state of that person is worse than the first. So also will it be with this evil generation." Mat 12:43-45 ESV*

At this point I would like to look closer at the nature of interactions between the living and the dead:

- * **Mediumship** (i.e., channelling or speaking for the dead),
- * **necromancy** (i.e., serving or worshiping the dead), and
- * **enquiring from the dead** (i.e., soliciting information from the dead).

MNE are expressly forbidden in Scripture. However, the lines of distinction between forbidden MNE and certain accepted Christian practices are sometimes subtle, for example:

- 💡 There is considerable disagreement about the concept of ‘salvation after death’ and therefore praying on behalf of the dead – as the Roman Catholic Church teaches for the sake of souls in Purgatory. However, there is little disagreement about the value of repenting for the sins of the ancestors⁷¹.
- 💡 What determines the distinction between a normal grieving process and maintaining an ‘ungodly spirit-soul tie’ between a living and a deceased individual? Scripture suggests that 30 days is the limit for suspending the responsibilities of daily living in mourning (**Num 20:29 and Deut 34:8**). Beyond this, the boundary between mourning and necromancy becomes blurred.
- 💡 Given that we are told not to serve the dead (which is the essence of necromancy), is honouring deceased parents by putting flowers on their graves not a form of serving the dead? Are flowers in order but food is not? How are these lines drawn?
- 💡 Inquiry of the dead is forbidden in **Deuteronomy 18**. A difficulty therefore arises when ministering to an individual, who – knowingly or unknowingly – is harbouring the spirit-soul residua of a deceased individual. The person ministering to the individual might inadvertently be speaking to, or even obtaining information from, the deceased entity.

⁷¹ What is not known, specifically, is what all the ramifications of such repentance are within the timelessness of eternity. At the very least, our repentance breaks the hold that the consequences of iniquity of our ancestors have on us. What the actual spiritual nature of the inherited ‘iniquity’ is which is “visited on the children”, is not entirely clear, however. Therefore, when considering the impact of Jesus’ atoning death on those who had died before his arrival, we may need to be cautious about insisting that confession of generational iniquity has no upstream effects: Such a redemptive purpose would greatly change our perspective on God’s character and mercy in cases of ‘undeserved’, inherited defects, particularly when viewed in combination with the prospect of eternal resurrection of the body. In Corinth there was even a practice amongst Believers to be baptised for the sake of the dead (as mentioned in 1 Co 15). This is not a common practice today, but cleansing people of ‘familiar spirits’ is a recognised part of various deliverance ministries.

Given this possibility, **what is the difference between enquiry of the dead and speaking to the dead?** Is it the purpose or practice itself?

The first and second letters of Peter also introduce several questions:

- 🕯 Jesus is said to have preached the Gospel to those who died in the Flood. What was the outcome of his sermon? Was there Salvation after death or not? If there was, on what basis? Repentance of sins? Accepting his Lordship?
- 🕯 There is also a suggestion that Believers who follow the teaching of Balaam – i.e., those who violate the Covenant boundaries of **Acts 15 (Leviticus 16 & 17)** will be destroyed in the flesh but be preserved in the spirit. Where does this fit into the “life after death” continuum? Where do they go when they die?
- 🕯 If we are to follow the example of our Master and Saviour, where does it leave us in terms of preaching the Gospel to the dead? Are we to imitate Him? How should modern Believers follow His example? Does this apply to human spirit-soul residua encountered in ministry situations or in ‘hauntings’? Should we ignore or do we evangelize the dead? Or are we to simply cleanse spiritual defilement off people, objects and land – whatever the cause – with no regard to human spirit-soul residua?

A combination of fear, superstition and religious arrogance; incomplete understanding; oversimplification of the concepts of MNE; lack of discernment of spirits; and ignorance of underlying principles, may all greatly affect the way these areas of Scripture are applied.

What is essential, though, is that we pursue a better path than the present extremes of either ignoring the issues completely; condemning other Believers who are following God’s leading to address them; or focusing on them to the exclusion of God’s covenantal relationship priorities.

Detailed footnotes are provided to point out inconsistencies in translating the terms for spiritual entities from the original manuscripts⁷².

⁷² In the Greek New Testament Scriptures, the word for ‘demon’ **G1140**, is in and of itself, not very specific in either its original or translated forms. In Latin or Greek the word for ‘demon’ had a host of meanings, ranging from lesser ‘gods’ to dead human spirits and it could therefore be applied to any of these entities. Therefore, generally speaking, English translations of the Bible, and particularly of the New Testament, are not very reliable for differentiating between ‘demons’ and ‘devils’, nor between ‘demons’, ‘goat-demons’ and ‘departed spirits’. Building a sound theological understanding of these entities from English translations is – in my opinion – very problematic.

For the purpose of the primary manuscript, however, the following is central:

There are at least 7 distinct Hebrew words associated with the spiritual entities:

- *male goat ‘demons’* (H8163 / H8163a) *and*
- *female goat ‘demons’*⁷³ (H7700) ;
- *departed spirits*⁷⁴ (H7496) ;
- *evil spirits*⁷⁵ (H7451 and H7307) ;
- *lying spirits*⁷⁶ (H8267 and H7307) ;
- *unclean spirits*⁷⁷ (H2932 and H7307) ; *and*
- *devil or devils*⁷⁸ (H7854)

⁷³ The Old Testament Hebrew words that are *translated* most consistently in English as demons are **H7700** [♀] ‘Shad’ and **H8163** [♂] ‘Sair’.

⁷⁴ Old Testament Hebrew words translated as ‘goat demons’, ‘demons’ and ‘departed spirits’ originate from three distinctly different Hebrew words, but translations into English are not consistent

⁷⁵ References to ‘evil spirits’ are in **Jdg 9:23; 1Sa 16:14-16, 23; 1Sa 18:10; 1Sa 19:9; 2Ch 18:22.**

⁷⁶ **1Ki 22:22,’23 and 2Ch 18:21, 22.**

⁷⁷ “When that day comes, a spring will be opened up for the house of David and the people living in Yerushalayim to cleanse them from sin and impurity. “When that day comes,” says Adonai-Tzva’ot, “I will cut off the very names of the idols from the land, so that no one even remembers them anymore. I will also expel the [false] prophets and the **spirit of uncleanness** from the land” Zec 13:1-2 CJB. It is also helpful to see that the ‘names of the idols’ and the ‘unclean spirits’ (or spirit of uncleanness) are removed as separate interventions, implying that they are also separate entities.

⁷⁸ The word ‘devil’ is also translated very inconsistently: In the Hebrew, the word **H7854** is associated with opposition and is rendered as slanderer, accuser, enemy, or as the name ‘Satan’ depending on the context. The word in New Testament Greek that fits this meaning the best is **G1228** and is applied as such in the following Scriptures: **Mat 4:1,5,8,11; Mat 13:39; Mat 25:41; Luk 4:2,3,5,6,13; Luk 8:12; Joh 6:70; Joh 8:44; Joh 13:2; Act 10:38; Act 13:10; Eph 4:27; Eph 6:11; 1Ti 3:6,7; 2Ti 2:26; Heb 2:14; Jas 4:7; 1Pe 5:8; 1Jn 3:8,10; Jud 1:9; Rev 2:10; Rev 12:9, Rev 12:12; Rev 20:2,10.** Unfortunately, one of the oldest and most respected English translations, the King James Version, does not differentiate clearly between ‘devil’ (**G1228**) and ‘demon’ (**G1140**) and translates the latter inconsistently as ‘devil’ in various passages, which adds to the confusion: **Mat 7:22; Mat 9:33,34; Mat 10:8; Mat 11:18; Mat 12:24,27,28; Mat 17:18; Mar 1:34, 39; Mar 3:15,22; Mar 6:13; Mar 7:26, 7:29, 30; Mar 9:38; Mar 16:9,17; Luk 4:33,35,41; Luk 7:33; Luk 8:2,27,30,33,35,38; Luk 9:1; Luk 9:42,49; Luk 10:17; Luk 11:14,15,18,19,20; Luk 13:32; Joh 7:20; Joh 8:48,49,52; Joh 10:20,21; Act 17:18; 1Co 10:20,21; 1Ti 4:1; Jas 2:19; Rev 9:20.**

Male and female goat demons are associated with child sacrifices in Scripture⁷⁹.

Departed spirits are the subject of MNE and are associated especially with ‘whoring’, sexual impurity and adultery⁸⁰.

Evil spirits are described as being “sent by the LORD” and appear to produce confusion, rage, torment, betrayal, mental dysfunction or emotional instability in leaders who had spilled innocent blood or rebelled against God by inappropriate sacrificing – most notably Abimelech and Saul.

“Lying spirits” are mentioned specifically in relation to king Ahab’s prophets and ultimately lead to the death of the King in retaliation for the murder of Naboth.⁸¹

⁷⁹ “So they shall no more sacrifice their sacrifices to [♂] **goat demons**, after whom they whore. This shall be a statute forever for them throughout their generations”. **Lev 17:7 ESV**; “They sacrificed to [♀] **demons** that were no ‘gods’, to ‘gods’ they had never known, to new ‘gods that had come recently, whom your fathers had never dreaded”. **Deu 32:17 ESV**; “They sacrificed their sons and their daughters to the [♀] **demons**” **Psa 106:37 ESV**. When the association between goat demons and human sacrifices is compared to the list in Deu 18:9-12, it becomes clearer that *burning a son or daughter* relates to *goat demon* worship, whereas *mediumship, necromancy and enquiry of the dead* is associated with *departed spirits*. The key issue is that *goat demons* are not the same as *departed spirits*; both the words and associated practices are completely different. However, the confusion does not end here: Whilst the translation of **H7700** and **H8163** as *demons* is fairly consistent in recent English translations, there is no actual word for – demon – in the Hebrew Scriptures. It relates somewhat more to **H7700** – which is also translated ‘shades’ from the transliteration of ‘Shadim’, but that does not account for **H8163 / H8163a** which is ‘Sair’ (also used in Isaiah 13:21 and 34:1). The latter word is used uniquely in four applications: (1) to describe the hairiness of Esau; (2) for male goat’s that were designated as sacrifices; (3) for satyrs or goat-demons, for which the KJV then uses the word ‘devils’; and (4) as the symbol of the Kingdom of Greece in Daniel 8:21.

⁸⁰ The term for (i.e., **H7496**), and practices associated with, “departed spirits”, “the dead” or “ghosts”, are mentioned very specifically in the book of Proverbs. In Proverbs 2:16 and Proverbs 9:18 they are tied to illicit sex and adultery. In Prov 2:16, the inference is that illicit sex, which constitutes a breach in covenant, leads to death and a trail towards the *departed spirits*. It is stated even more explicitly in **Pro 9:17-18 (ESV)** in relation to the “foolish women” who seduce the “simple” saying “*that the dead are there, that her guests are in the depths of Sheol*”. More generically, in **Pro 21:16 (ESV)** says that a man who *wanders out of the way of [the Lord’s] good sense, will rest in the assembly of the dead*. So, this supports an interpretation that there is a definite association between covenant violations and either being associated with ghosts, or possibly ‘becoming’ one.

⁸¹ There is specific rabbinical teaching that it was actually the spirit of Naboth himself that was sent for the purpose: Babylonian Talmud; Tractate Sanhedrin 89a.

I have only found one specific reference to “**unclean spirits**” in the Old Testament, and it is in the form of a prophetic pronouncement that they will be removed from the land⁸².

The Hebrew word for ‘**devil**’ or ‘**devils**’ is rendered as ‘satan’ specifically, or as ‘enemy’, ‘adversary’, ‘slanderer’, or ‘accuser’ depending on the context.

Importantly, these levels of specificity, contained in the original Hebrew Scriptures, are not preserved in English translations of the Bible. Similarly, English translations from the Greek render ‘devil’ and ‘demon’ interchangeably even though there are distinct Greek words for each of these.

The point is therefore that, for the most part, **English translations of the Old Testament, and especially of the New Testament, do not render consistently, nor do they differentiate clearly between, ‘demons’, ‘goat-demons’ and ‘departed spirits’; or between ‘demons’ and ‘devils’.**

Consequently, building a coherent theological understanding of these entities from English translations is problematic. This is another reason why it seems more helpful to examine the impact on the 8 states of being – **clean vs. unclean; righteous vs. unrighteous; good vs. evil; holy vs. profane** – rather than teasing out the rather ambiguous nominal classification of goat-demon, demon, departed spirits, evil spirits, lying spirits, unclean spirits or devil.

Moreover, Scripture provides much instruction on how to overcome these adverse spiritual states, and this should be the primary focus; the type of ‘spiritual pathogen’ is obviously relevant, but secondary.

⁸² *And it shall come to pass in that day, saith the LORD of hosts, that I will cut off the names of the idols out of the land, and they shall no more be remembered: and also I will cause the prophets and the **unclean spirit** to pass out of the land.* Zec 13:2 KJV

What about the Nephilim and the ‘giants’?

In **Genesis 6:2-4** we learn of the appearance of ‘giants’ or ‘Rephaim’ as a result of the illicit union between the sons of God and the daughters of man⁸³.

Irrespective of the various theories and controversies surrounding the event and the resulting hybrid offspring – the Nephilim; and notwithstanding concerns about the spiritual residua of the dead Nephilim; it is also important that we should consider the implications associated with the spiritual residua of dead humans:

We should be cautious not to become so preoccupied with the one that we completely ignore the other. Scriptural references to ‘departed spirits’⁸⁴ suggest that they are not necessarily inert in the wake of human depravity; ‘dead’ is not necessarily ‘gone’.

⁸³ There is some controversy about who the “Sons of God” were and what became of the *departed spirits* of the so-called hybrid offspring – the Nephilim. In 2 Peter 2:4 and Jude 1:6 as well as the apocryphal Book of Enoch there is further mention of this event, but the emphasis is on the judgement of the ‘angels’ or ‘sons of God’ rather than the destiny of their offspring. Because of the close association between the word used for “giants” (H7497) and “the dead” or “departed spirits” (H7496) the belief has emerged that the spirits of the dead Nephilim are the origin of ‘demons’. Notwithstanding the ambiguity of the word, “demons”, and the fact that this possibility cannot be excluded, it also cannot be substantiated purely on the basis of the similarity between the words for “giants” and “departed spirits” either: **Rephaim (H7497)**, are mentioned as living entities or territories in Gen 14:5; Gen 15:20; Deu 2:11; Deu 2:20; Deu 3:11,13; Jos 12:4; Jos 13:12; Jos 15:8; Jos 17:15; Jos 18:16; 2Sa 5:18,22; 2Sa 23:13; 1Ch 11:15; 1Ch 14:9; 1Ch 20:4; 1Ch 20:6; 1Ch 20:8; Isa 17:5. **‘Departed spirits’ or ‘ghosts’ (H7496)** are mentioned in only the following 8 verses: Job 26:5; Psalms 88:10; Proverbs 2:18; Proverbs 9:18; Proverbs 21:16; Isaiah 14:9; Isaiah 26:14; Isaiah 26:19 and relate specifically to ‘the dead’.

⁸⁴ **‘Departed spirits’ or ‘ghosts’ (H7496)** are mentioned in only the following 8 verses: Job 26:5; Psalms 88:10; Proverbs 2:18; Proverbs 9:18; Proverbs 21:16; Isaiah 14:9; Isaiah 26:14; Isaiah 26:19 and relate specifically to ‘the dead’.

Given the small but significant number of Old Testament references to departed spirits, the insights they offer are precious. In addition to the associations listed previously in relation to covenant breaking and ghosts, some of the references in Job and Isaiah actually link to the New Testament gospels:

- 🕯 In **Job 26:5-12**, there is a reference to the departed spirits who writhe beneath the waters, but God quiets the sea. This draws important parallels with **Mark 6:48-52** where the disciples see Jesus walking on the water, and are frightened because they believe He is a ghost. However, He ends up by calming the sea and it says that they were astonished⁸⁵. This not only shows that Jesus is God, but also links the New Testament reference to a ghost to the Old Testament reference to the “departed spirits”.
- 🕯 **Isaiah 8:14-20** contains several distinct Messianic references, and a stern rebuke about God’s people enquiring about the living from the dead! This refers directly to **Luke 24:5** where the two angels rebuke the women by asking: “Why are you... [searching to find about] the living [from] the dead?” At the time, there was an established practice to enquire from the dead, but more importantly, the angels echo the words of the Prophet by instructing them to seek their God who, in this case, was the resurrected Christ.

There are several passages in the New Testament that should be considered also:

- 🕯 In the Gospel of Luke there is a detailed description of the first interaction between Jesus and His disciples after His resurrection. Here, He expends significant effort proving that He is not a ghost. He says: “Look at My hands and My Feet — it is I, myself! Touch Me and see — a ghost doesn’t have flesh and bones, as you can see I do.” As He said this, He showed them His hands and feet.” **Luke 24:39-40** CJB. Not only does He not deny the existence of ghosts, but He contrasts His own features with theirs: unlike ghosts, they are able to touch Him, and He is able to eat.

⁸⁵ “And he saw that...the wind was against them. And about the fourth watch of the night he came to them, walking on the sea...but when they saw him walking on the sea **they thought it was a ghost**, and cried out, for they all saw him and were terrified. But immediately he spoke to them and said, “Take heart; it is I. Do not be afraid.” And he got into the boat with them, and **the wind ceased. And they were utterly astounded...**” Mar 6:48-51 ESV. The **departed spirits are made to writhe from beneath the waters**, and their inhabitants. Sheol is naked before Him, and the Pit has no covering... With His power **He quiets the sea**, and by His understanding He shatters pride. Job 26:5-12 LITV.

In **Luke 11**, Jesus addresses several topics, including the “Our Father” prayer, forgiveness, petitioning prayer, the gift of the Holy Spirit, a case of deliverance, the analogy of the strongman⁸⁶, and the results and potential complications of deliverance. Two of the themes are of particular relevance:

•**Spiritual gifts:**

Before explaining that God will give the Holy Spirit to those who keep on asking, Jesus uses the example of a father’s response to a child requesting food. He asks His disciples if they would, instead of a fish and an egg, give their children a snake and a scorpion. Both snakes and scorpions have the capacity to inflict harm, but snakes have dangerous heads, and scorpions have dangerous tails. Thematically, snakes have a closer association with harmful spirits and scorpions with unclean creatures⁸⁷. The point, again, is that there is more than one harmful entity.

•**The unclean spirit:**

The detailed description of deliverance from an unclean spirit states that when it is cast out it goes to a “dry” or “waterless” wasteland without a moment’s rest. This does not seem to correspond to the usual places of assembly of impure spirits like Sheol, Gehennom or ‘Hell’. Moreover, unlike the rich man in the parable of Lazarus, this spirit seems freely able to return and even has access to other spirits – “more evil than itself” – which join it in ‘possessing’ the same individual anew.

⁸⁶ **MSWV**: The analogy of the ‘strongman’ has been used extensively to explain spiritual bondage and to model the process of deliverance. In the classical view, the strongman is thought of as a ‘demon’ in charge of a stronghold. The inference is that one is to bind the strongman and to strip him of his armour. However, in the analogy Jesus used, the endpoint is not freedom but ruin. Also, if considering the parallelism of Jesus in his following statement that “those who do not gather with me are scattering”, it may rather support an inverse interpretation: It might suggest an individual who is fully functional, but who is then overcome by a spiritual entity stronger than he is. Then his defences are overpowered, his assets are brought into disarray, and they are dispersed. In support of this possibility, the ‘strongman’ is described as “guarding his own palace”, which appears to indicate that he is the rightful owner. Given the imagery related to possession in several of the Gospels – in which a spirit seizes someone – it would seem that the analogy is that of a hostile takeover not recovery from bondage. Given this perspective, deliverance is not merely a stripping away of the enemy but also equipping the owner to guard his palace. This also fits with the subsequent passage describing the return of an unclean spirit.

⁸⁷ From Benner’s Lexicon: Parent Root: 𐤔𐤒. Associated actions: Extinguish, Crush, Rattle, Restrain. Associated nouns: Heel, Anklet. Related words: extinguish (H 2193); press firmly (H4600); Rattle (H5913); anklet (H5914); restrain by grabbing the heel (H6117); heel (H6119, H6120); subtlety - in the sense of hidden or restrained (H6122); crooked (H6121); mouse (H5909); spider (H5908); poisonous creature (H5919); and **scorpion (H6137)**.

OTHER REFERENCES

It has puzzled me why the issue of 'ghosts' has again become so topical in our present culture. Greater spiritual awareness, global communication, and the explosion of social media may certainly be contributing factors.

However, there is something else that is unique about the times we are living in:

There has never been a greater number of living people than are alive today, nor have more people ever died than have done so in the past 100 years:

Current estimates suggest that there are 6.98 billion people alive 'today' (as of 2011). Speculative calculations have proposed that approximately 107.6 billion people 'ever lived'.⁸⁸ As such, about 6.5% of those who ever lived are alive today. The implication, of course, is that about 100 billion people have died up to today. Of these, 5.5 billion people have died over the last 111 years (due to natural and unnatural causes).

However, it is estimated that at least 203 million people died violently in the 20th century alone, in the ravages of the two World Wars, the Holocaust, mass genocides, Communism and its associated wars.⁸⁹ This does not include premature loss of human life through disease and poverty. On top of this, it is estimated that there have been at least 1.3 billion abortions since 1980⁹⁰, and WHO estimates more than 22 million additional 'unsafe' abortions are performed per year (2008)⁹¹.

If human spirit-soul residua do exist, and if violation of covenants and premature death are associated with the appearance of these phenomena, they should certainly be evident today.

In addition to the Biblical text itself, there are several relevant Christian and Jewish reference works on disembodied spirits. Only a selected few are listed.⁹²

⁸⁸ <http://www.prb.org/Publications/Articles/2002 HowManyPeopleHaveEverLivedonEarth.aspx>

⁸⁹ <http://necrometrics.com/index.htm>

⁹⁰ <http://www.numberofabortions.com/>

⁹¹ http://www.who.int/reproductivehealth/topics/unsafe_abortion/en/

⁹² (1) Perry, M (1984). *Psychic studies – a Christian's view*. Wellingborough, Northamptonshire. Aquarian Press; (2) McAll, K. (1982). *Healing the Family Tree*. London, Sheldon Press. (3) Fiore, E. (1995). *The unquiet dead – a psychologist treats spirit possession*. Random House Publishing. (4) Baldwin, W.J. (2003). *Healing lost souls – releasing unwanted spirits from your body energy*. Hampton Roads Publishing.

The Jewish authors draw from Scriptural, Rabbinical and Jewish mysticism sources. Their works contain well-argued, Scripturally supported, scientifically grounded, scholarly delineations of the subject of afterlife considerations and disembodied spiritual entities⁹³.

Their categorization includes:

The **Gilgul**, which is the phenomenon of a deceased human spirit-soul joining an existing host very early in life or even prior to birth.

In addition, they recognize a type of human spirit-soul impregnation, called an **Ibbur**, which is offered as the explanation how people may acquire specific human abilities or liabilities in life which they never learnt or developed themselves – for better or worse.⁹⁴

Then there is the category of specific spiritual attachments, which are invariably harmful to some extent; they are called **Dybbuks or Dybukkim**, which means ‘clinging’.

Within this category there is a distinction between:

- (1) **Dybbuk min ruach ra’ah** – which corresponds to the concept of either an evil or an unclean human spirit; and
- (2) **Dybbuk min ha-Hizonim** – which means clinging spirit from the ‘other side’; by inference ‘demonic’.

Islam also recognises these spiritual entities and describes 5 classes of ‘demons’ -- ‘jann’, ‘jinn’, ‘shaitans’, ‘afrits’, and ‘marids’⁹⁵. Some of the most recent scientific publications on spirit possession are offered from an Islamic perspective⁹⁶.

⁹³ (1) Raphael, S. P. (2009). *Jewish views of the afterlife*. Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield Publishers; (2) Winkler, G. (1992). *The Soul of the Matter: A Jewish Perspective on the Human Soul Before, During, and After "life"*. Judaica Press.; (3) Spitz, E. K. (2000). *Does the soul survive? A Jewish journey to belief in afterlife, past lives, & living with purpose*. Jewish Lights Publishing. (4) Winkler, G. (1981). *Dybbuk*. USA: Judaica Press. (5) Pinson, D. (1999). *Reincarnation and Judaism - the journey of the soul*. Oxford: Rowman & Littlefield Publishers, Inc. These authors’ humble willingness to wrestle with the material and concepts, and to reconcile and argue them from Scripture, has impressed me greatly. Many of these works, including several extremely credible eye witness accounts, present Scripturally-consistent interpretations of these observations that are more in keeping with the New Testament Scriptures than some recognized Christian sources on these topics are. I would not recommend that they be read by new Believers, due to the complexity of the material, but their ability to search out Scriptural concordance within this contentious area has earned my enduring admiration, appreciation and respect.

⁹⁴ The concept of an **Ibbur** overlaps with the concept of generational blessings or cursings; they are recognized in the form of specific “packages” or “abilities” or a specific “goal-orientation”, but not usually as a discernible identity.

⁹⁵ http://www.thejinn.net/jinn_classification.htm

⁹⁶ Abu'l-Mundhir Khaleel ibn Ibraaheem Ameen. (2005). *The Jinn and Human Sickness: Remedies in the Light of the Qur'aan and Sunnah*. Darussalam Publications.

Buddhism also has extensive literature on the concepts of reincarnation and dying; it includes various human and non-human spiritual phenomena and experiences that relate very closely to OBE's and NDE's.⁹⁷

Please note that I am not endorsing any of the non-Biblical references I am quoting – even those by Christian authors or ministries – as being completely accurate or spiritually sound. However, the similarity between the various recorded observations is noteworthy, even where the theological or scientific interpretations appear to have little in common.⁹⁸

Consistent observations, amidst religious and scientific disagreement, actually adds credibility to the observations themselves. Also, the various classifications and explanatory approaches assist in better defining some of the spiritual entities when studied from a Biblical foundation.⁹⁹

Several authors have tried to develop new words to overcome the stigma and various cultural, mythical or religious overlays associated with spiritual oppression and possession. The outcomes have been variable due to the underlying theological premise and due to the inevitable associations within a given language and culture.

One of the more helpful attempts – in my opinion – is the extremely pragmatic approach followed by William Baldwin.¹⁰⁰ His classification divides spiritual entities into three main categories:

Earth Bounds or EB's;

Dark Force Entities or DFE's; and

Extra-terrestrials or ET's.

⁹⁷ Coleman, Graham, with Thupten Jinpa (eds.) (2005) *The Tibetan Book of the Dead : The Great Liberation by Hearing in the Intermediate States*. London: Penguin Books. New York.

⁹⁸ Guiley, R.E. (2013). *The Djinn Connection: The Hidden Links Between Djinn, Shadow People, ETs, Nephilim, Archons, Reptilians and Other Entities*. Visionary Living, Inc. This reference explores the common origins of many spiritual entities.

⁹⁹ *To all who are themselves pure, everything is pure. But to those who are defiled and without trust, nothing is pure — even their minds and consciences have been defiled.* Tit 1:13-15 CJB

¹⁰⁰ Baldwin, William. (2003). *Healing Lost Souls: Releasing Unwanted Spirits from your Energy Body*. Hampton Roads. Ghosts and deceased human spirit-souls fit well within Baldwin's concept of **Earth Bounds** or EB's. Malevolent spiritual entities (including 'demons'), are referred to as **Dark Force Entities** or DFE's; and Non-human intelligences (whether visible or invisible), including angels (in religious contexts) or aliens (in secular ones) are designated as **Extra-terrestrials**. The benefit I have found in his classification – other than serving as more 'neutral' alternatives to the existing terms – is that it captures the central feature of the entities: (1) **EB's** are usually fairly '*incidental*' and may be associated with 'earth-related' physical objects, specific events, areas or structures, or people (whom they may 'join' under certain circumstances with variable effects); (2) **DFE's** are actively '*interfering*' and are associated with malicious intentions and physical harm; while (3) **ET's** are '*intervening*' entities, which may be either for better or for worse.

These parallel ghosts, demons and angels while avoiding the usual secular-religious, inter-religious and religio-scientific divides created by the use of the latter terms.

To my knowledge there are two other terms related to FR which denote human spirit-soul residua affecting the living: deceased human spirits (DHS)¹⁰¹ and alien human spirits (AHS)¹⁰².

¹⁰¹ Kanaan Ministries (<http://www.kanaanministries.org/>) has a long track record with advanced and highly specialized ministry/counselling and spiritual warfare - particularly in the areas of un-Godly covenants, involvement in secret organisations, Dissociated Identity Disorder (DID), Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA), and paganism/witchcraft, including African witchcraft. Their discovery and strategies related to DHS' have been developed over many years of ministry to people of all bloodlines/ancestry, as well as addressing many of the spiritual challenges related to their home-continent of Africa.

¹⁰² Sapphire Leadership Group (http://www.theslg.com/Alien_Human_Spirit_p/sw_ahs.htm) has an extensive record for pursuing solutions and for cutting-edge innovation by deriving and applying analogies and principles from Scripture. Focal areas include a fractal (repetitive pattern) approach to our triune human design – spirit, soul and body. These principles are applied in the pursuit of reclaiming of our God-given treasures, birth right, legitimacy, dominion and honour. Nurturing and blessing the human spirit is an important foundational approach, as well as the appreciation of the differential design and function of the human soul vs. the human spirit. Their work on *alien human spirits* is not the core focus of the ministry; rather it was prompted by observational findings in certain ministry situations and necessitated by the absence of established Christian theology in this area. Areas of some controversy include the level of engagement with these entities themselves; the identified reasons for vulnerability to them; and the specific physical associations, like abnormalities of the hips, feet, ribs, etc. The descriptions related to AHS' are consistent with scientific and Jewish mystical interpretations and observations.

TRANSCORPOREAL SIGNS (TCS)

TCS represent the physical manifestation of a spiritual entity through, or by means of, a body. This includes concepts of FR (deceased human spirit-related phenomena) as well as other forms of non-human spiritual transfer and manifestation.¹⁰³

It is interesting to note that the concepts of **spirit possession** and **‘culture-bound’** syndrome are now being published more widely and even in well-established scientific journals. Originally these publications appeared in non-peer-reviewed journals from countries or nations already receptive to that particular spiritual world-view.¹⁰⁴

More recently, the situation has started to change.¹⁰⁵ Some of the benefits are greater scientific credibility and awareness, improved accessibility (English medium and proper archiving), encouragement of dialogue, and proper documentation of observations, with reference to their original sources.

Somewhat surprisingly, the empirical evidence for FR (i.e., human spirit-soul possession) is possibly the strongest of all.

¹⁰³ Attributing mental health problems and physical disease to ‘demonic’ causes is not new. However, scientific advances and modern Christian theology have produced two important diversions: Science has pursued organic causes to the exclusion of the mind and spirit, whereas modern Christian theology has largely removed human spirit-soul residua as a potential spiritual pathogen. Thoughts vs. ghosts have been replaced by ‘molecules’ vs. ‘demons’. This was not always the case: for example, Prof Harvey Cushing, a renowned neurosurgeon at Yale, described disease as a ‘ghostly manifestation’. Shin, P. (2011). Harvey Cushing's ghosts: death and hauntings in modern medicine. *Yale J Biol Med*, 84 (2), 91-101. Today, epigenetics (i.e., the study of factors affecting the expression of our genome), is starting to converge these two extreme views (<http://www.bbc.co.uk/sn/tvradio/programmes/horizon/ghostgenes.shtml>).

¹⁰⁴ Accordingly, they are usually stripped of terms associated with monotheism, and position themselves along the lines of Eastern religious philosophies and certain generic concepts of ‘reincarnation’. Even so, these articles are peer-reviewed, written in the language of science, and accessible via the academic domains. A recent article offers an excellent summary with many references worth pursuing: Pasricha SK. (2011). *Relevance of para-psychology in psychiatric practice*. Indian J Psychiatry 2011; 53:4-8. Many such articles have originated from India.

¹⁰⁵ (1) Khalifa, N., & Hardie, T. (2005). *Possession and jinn*. Journal of the Royal Society of Medicine, 98(8):351–353; (2) Dein S., Samad A. (2013) *Possession and jinn*. The Psychiatrist. 37: 290-293. (3) Cohen E. (2008). *What is spirit possession? Defining, comparing, and explaining two possession forms*. Ethnos 2008; 73: 101-26. (4) Littlewood R. (2004). *Possession states*. Psychiatry 3 (8): 8-10.

There are at least 2500, carefully documented cases that are highly suggestive of FR¹⁰⁶; several of these demonstrate specific **physical signs** such as:

- (1) **birthmarks** with the same appearance as the fatal wounds of the deceased individual said to be residing within them;¹⁰⁷
- (2) **the capacity to speak** a previously unlearned language – xenoglossia¹⁰⁸ ; and
- (3) **past life memories** associated with previously deceased individuals, whose identity, death and life-details could be verified subsequently by means of a scrupulous forensic investigation¹⁰⁹.

¹⁰⁶ Prof Ian Stevenson (Division of Perceptual studies; Department of Psychiatry; University of Virginia) – did extensive, forensic style interviews of cases in India, West Africa, and the United States where children claimed to have memories of a previously deceased individual. He and his associated researchers have explored more than 2500 cases, of which at least half could be verified by reliable witnesses, and of which at least 25 stood up to the most stringent forensic scrutiny. Prof Stevenson was very meticulous in recording history and testimonies to exclude fraud or bias in the witnesses. He has been duly recognised for this work. Although he is sometimes quoted as having “proved reincarnation”, he never claimed to have done so. The manifestations he described could quite easily be called a form of FR or human spirit-soul possession. The unique aspects of his findings were that the possessing entity appeared to transfer, not only part of the identity, personality and memories of the deceased individual, but in some cases also the ability to speak a foreign language (called xenoglossy) and the development of birth marks or defects corresponding, beyond the possibility of chance, with the fatal wounds of the deceased individual. This is consistent with the concept of a Gilgul or Ibbur, mentioned previously. In a large number of the cases Prof Stevenson studied, there was no familial or historic interaction between the living and the deceased individuals. They often lived many miles apart. These findings have been published in legitimate scientific journals and have stood up to the most rigorous scrutiny. It is not necessarily a common finding, but it constitutes definite empirical evidence and is considered a valid observation. <http://www.medicine.virginia.edu/clinical/departments/psychiatry/sections/cspp/dops/home-page>.

¹⁰⁷ Stevenson, I. (1993). *Birthmarks and birth defects corresponding to wounds on deceased persons*. Journal of Scientific Exploration. 7(4):403-410.

¹⁰⁸ Stevenson, I. (1974). *Xenoglossy: A review and report of a case*. (Proceedings of the American Society for Psychical Research, 31.) New York: American Society for Psychical Research. [Republished, Charlottesville: University Press of Virginia, 1974.]; (2) Stevenson, I. (1984). *Unlearned language: New studies in xenoglossy*. Charlottesville: University Press of Virginia.

¹⁰⁹ Stevenson, I. (1983). American children who claim to remember previous lives. *J Nerv Ment Dis*, 171(12), 742-748.

Others have also documented cases of physical findings associated with 'past lives' or so-called Characteristics of the Reincarnation Type (CORT). The quality and type of evidence supersedes socio-psychological explanations.¹¹⁰

Because Prof Stevenson's work has been quoted most widely for the purpose of supporting 'reincarnation', the Christian theological implications have not been studied nor applied.¹¹¹ Part of my reason for introducing the concept of FR (as opposed to TR) is to permit this.

There is great divergence of opinion regarding how to address disruptive TCS or FR phenomena. Exorcism, spiritual deliverance; spirit-soul remnant removal, past life regression, soul fragment integration, and inner healing all touch on this area.

However, because the theological premises are so divergent, inter-religious and inter-disciplinary collaboration are neither sought nor offered. Methodologies and opinions often remain unchallenged and become entrenched.

Although not devoid of bias, science has started to offer a more neutral platform for exploration. Also, it is possible to study the areas of agreement collaboratively without needing to achieve consensus on theological differences or the subsequent application of the research findings.

Physical- and electro-physical remedies such as trauma releasing exercises, eye-movement-directed-reprogramming, acupuncture, electro-convulsive therapy, neurostimulation, neuromodulation, and alpha-theta therapy all seem to be addressing different facets of this domain, with variable success and implications.

¹¹⁰ (1) Tucker J.B. (2008) *Children's Reports of Past-Life Memories: A Review*, EXPLORE: The Journal of Science and Healing, 4(4), 244-248; (2) Meyersburg C.A., McNally R.J. *Reduced death distress and greater meaning in life among individuals reporting past life memory*. Personality and Individual Differences, 50(8), 1218-1221. (3) Schwartz, S.A. (2013) *Crossing the Threshold: Nonlocal Consciousness and the Burden of Proof*. EXPLORE: The Journal of Science and Healing, 9 (2), 77-81; (4) Lucchetti G., Camargo L., Lucchetti A.L.G., et al. (2013) *Rare Medical Conditions and Suggestive Past-Life Memories: A Case Report and Literature Review*. EXPLORE: The Journal of Science and Healing, Volume 9 (6), 372-376. (5) Schouten, S. A., & Stevenson, I. (1998). Does the socio-psychological hypothesis explain cases of the reincarnation type? *J Nerv Ment Dis*, 186(8), 504-506.

¹¹¹ In Africa, generational familiarity with the 'dead human spirits' of ancestors has created a theological impasse between Christianity and African Traditional Religions: By and large, Christianity dismisses the entire notion of 'dead human spirits' and certainly forbids the practice of ancestor 'spirit worship'. In Asia, a similar situation exists between Monotheism (Christianity & Islam) and those religions supporting 'reincarnation' (Buddhism & Hinduism). Resolving these issues is therefore very relevant.

Yet, even amongst secular psychologists, there is growing acceptance of transpersonal psychology; this is now extending into 'past life regression' and 'spirit-soul release' therapies.¹¹² There certainly seems to be a move towards redefining human spirituality and health from a secular-scientific perspective.¹¹³

A related phenomenon, which is very poorly understood, is when individuals acquire certain aspects of another individual's character and desires by virtue of transplanted organs. Allegedly, nearly 6% of people receiving donor hearts undergo significant personality changes attributed to the owner of the donated heart.¹¹⁴

There are also significant changes in the recipient's likes and dislikes¹¹⁵. A very bizarre and tragic case was reported in the lay press in 2008.¹¹⁶ The prevailing hypothesis is cellular memory transfer, but the phenomenon starts to encroach upon the concept of soul transmigration.

Recent advances in high-resolution intra-uterine ultrasound have led to the discovery that many multiple pregnancies result in only a single live birth (i.e., there are unidentified losses of identical or fraternal twins while still in the womb)¹¹⁷

The evidence suggests, for instance, that individuals who are **born left-handed** are more likely to be the survivor of an identical, mirror-image (i.e., right-handed) twin.¹¹⁸

¹¹² <http://www.rcpsych.ac.uk/pdf/James%20Pandarakalam%20%20A%20search%20for%20the%20truth%20of%20Past%20Life%20Regression.pdf>

¹¹³ Walach, H., Kohls, N., & Belschner, W. (2005). [Transpersonal psychology -- psychology of consciousness: chances and problems]. *Psychother Psychosom Med Psychol*, 55(9-10), 405-415.

¹¹⁴ <http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/1299456>

¹¹⁵ <http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/10882878>

¹¹⁶ The report is of an extreme and tragic case: the recipient of the transplanted heart fell in love with the spouse of the deceased individual, divorced his wife to marry her, and ultimately ended up committing suicide in the same place with the same weapon 12 years later:

http://usatoday30.usatoday.com/news/nation/2008-08-30-1180586906_x.htm; http://www.islandpacket.com/2008/04/05/272035_suicide-claims-two-men-who-shared.html?rh=1; <http://articles.mercola.com/sites/articles/archive/2008/04/26/man-with-suicide-victim-s-heart-takes-own-life.aspx>

¹¹⁷ (1) International Planned Parenthood Federation, I. (1983). The vanishing twin. *Res Reprod*, 15(4), 1-2. (2) Landy, H. J., Keith, L., & Keith, D. (1982). The vanishing twin. *Acta Genet Med Gemellol (Roma)*, 31(3-4), 179-194. (3) Landy, H. J., Weiner, S., Corson, S. L., Batzer, F. R., & Bolognese, R. J. (1986). The "vanishing twin": ultrasonographic assessment of fetal disappearance in the first trimester. *Am J Obstet Gynecol*, 155(1), 14-19. (4) Sulak, L. E., & Dodson, M. G. (1986). The vanishing twin: pathologic confirmation of an ultrasonographic phenomenon. *Obstet Gynecol*, 68(6), 811-815. (5) <http://natgeotv.com/in/in-the-womb/videos/in-the-womb-identical-twins>

¹¹⁸ http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Vanishing_twin

Such intra-uterine ‘imprinting’, epigenetic programming, or even ‘unconscious’ exchanges (analogous to the physical trans-foetal transfusion syndrome) are actively being explored within the scientific domain.¹¹⁹

Gender dysphoria has been associated with gender-discordant ‘past lives’;¹²⁰ it may therefore be worth considering the possibility of FR originating from so-called ‘**vanishing twins**’.

On a related note: in the wake of the present epidemic increase in elective abortions around the world, there has been the associated appearance of the so-called ‘haunting foetus’. A recent PhD dissertation appeared on the subject with an associated book available to the general public.¹²¹

¹¹⁹ (1) Bokkon, I., Vas, J. P., Csaszar, N., & Lukacs, T. (2014). Challenges to free will: transgenerational epigenetic information, unconscious processes, and vanishing twin syndrome. *Rev Neurosci*, 25(1), 163-175. (2) De Pascalis, L., Monti, F., Agostini, F., Fagandini, P., La Sala, G. B., & Blickstein, I. (2008). Psychological vulnerability of singleton children after the 'vanishing' of a co-twin following assisted reproduction. *Twin Res Hum Genet*, 11(1), 93-98.

¹²⁰ Stevenson, I. (1977). The Southeast Asian interpretation of gender dysphoria: an illustrative case report. *J Nerv Ment Dis*, 165(3), 201-208.

¹²¹ Marc L. Moskowitz M.L. (2001). *The Haunting Fetus: Abortion, Sexuality, and The Spirit World in Taiwan*. University of Hawaii Press; Honolulu. In this publication emanating from his PhD dissertation, the author discusses the elaborate belief and experience in Taiwan associated with the recent rise in elective abortions: “*The Haunting Fetus focuses on the belief in modern Taiwan that an aborted foetus can return to haunt its family. Although the topic has been researched in Japan and commented on in the Taiwanese press, it has not previously been studied systematically in relation to Taiwan in either English or Chinese. This fascinating study looks at a range of topics pertaining to the belief in haunt. It describes the belief but also some strong empirical evidence supporting the physical, psychological and spiritual implications of abortion.*”

EXTRACORPOREAL SIGNS

There are many references and accounts of ECS.¹²² The purpose of mentioning them is not to authenticate them or to argue their validity as such.

Rather it is to indicate that they:

- (1) add support for the persistence of human spirit-soul residua after death; and
- (2) represent an area of conflict or ignorance within mainstream Christian theology.

Being a part of universal human experience, the impact of this theological blind spot is not fully appreciated.¹²³

¹²² Sadly most on-line references are unsubstantiated, distasteful, disturbingly graphic, sensationalistic, or highly suspect. Scientific accounts, although comprehensive in scope, are almost universally dismissive and sceptical in tone. <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ghost>. Many books have appeared on the topic, but most are not readily accessible. A recent book by Paul Roland offers a good overview. This is also where I discovered the story of C.S. Lewis and J.B. Philips [Roland, P. (2007). *The complete book of ghosts*. Chartwell Books]. Rosemary Guiley's comprehensive encyclopaedia is also available online and covers the material, historic records and related concepts with a methodical, paradoxically down-to-earth style:

<http://www.stengel.net/books/Encyclopedia%20of%20Ghosts%20and%20Spirits.pdf>. [Guiley, R.E. (2007). *Encyclopedia of ghosts and spirits*. 3rd Edition. Visionary Living].

¹²³ The general impression is that Christianity ignores, dismisses or shuns the concept of ghosts. Various references present this view very strongly, e.g., Rhodes, R. (2006). *The truth behind ghosts, mediums and psychic phenomena*. Harvest House Publishers. Others are less adamant. e.g., (1) Perry, M (1984). *Psychic studies – a Christian's view*. Wellingborough, Northamptonshire. Aquarian Press; and (2) McAll, K. (1982). *Healing the Family Tree*. London, Sheldon Press. It is certainly true that inappropriate dabbling and interest in paranormal phenomena draws people into the occult. Unfortunately, the reverse also has complications: ignorance or denial of harmful spirit world realities leaves individuals who are already in bondage to occultic influences without access to greater insight and freedom. African Traditional Religions are based on belief in ancestral spirits, whereas religions supporting 'reincarnation' in its various forms, are enjoying increasing support as growing scientific evidence for FR emerges. It has been said that conversion from Buddhism to Christianity is the least likely of all conversions; lack of clarity on this topic may be one of the reasons why this is so. In my opinion ignorance is not bliss. By way of analogy: this topic is much like the study of poisons: the goal is not to poison but to select the correct antidote. In the process, the researchers need to guard against getting poisoned themselves. However, knowing the symptoms of poisoning may assist in both recognising the poison and selecting the appropriate antidote.

There are several systems of classification for ghosts and hauntings, but – generally speaking – ECS' are divided into the following categories:

- (1) replay;
- (2) time slip;
- (3) interactive;
- (4) crisis apparition;
- (5) poltergeist;¹²⁴
- (6) Vardoger;¹²⁵ and
- (7) Doppelgänger¹²⁶ manifestations.

¹²⁴ Poltergeists, appear to be territorial interactive spiritual entities that pester those who share the house with them.

¹²⁵ Vardoger is a form of disembodied encounters related to a living individual who arrives and interacts with people prior to the arrival of the actual individual.

¹²⁶ <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Doppelg%C3%A4nger> & <https://marilyn kaydennis.wordpress.com/2011/06/15/emilie-sagee-the-ubiquitous-teacher/>
"Doppelgängers are a type of parallel appearance of individuals existing in two places at the same time. Identical twins would be the physical equivalent, whereas doppelgängers of the spiritual equivalent. Again they are well documented cases of these. The Famous Case of Emilie Sagée and her Doppelgänger. Before teaching at the Pensionat von Neuwelcke School for girls in France (pictured above), Emilie Sagée had taught at eighteen different schools. Eighteen schools from which she had been fired because of the phenomena that accompanied her. This 32-year old school teacher and her ability of bilocation has become one of the most witnessed and documented cases of a Doppelgänger in recorded history. As Sagée was writing on the chalkboard while teaching her class, her double appeared, standing alongside her mimicking her motions. It was her exact image except that it wasn't holding a piece of chalk. On another occasion, all of the school's 42 girls were in the school hall for sewing and embroidery class. As they worked, they could clearly see Sagée in the school's garden gathering flowers. However, when the girl's embroidery teacher left the hall for a moment, Sagée's Doppelgänger appeared, sitting motionless in the teacher's chair. Two girls tried to touch the apparition but were met with an odd resistance and were unable to penetrate the air surrounding the entity. Yet, one girl, stepping between the teacher's chair and the table, passed through the apparition, which then slowly vanished. Sagée was absolutely unconscious of what was happening and she only knew about the phenomenon because of the expression on the faces of the people who were there. It was by seeing their frightened faces, their eyes staring at something invisible which seemed to be moving near her, that she understood. But she had never, herself, seen her double; neither had she noticed the stiffness and slowing down of her movements when her double appeared." The historical record of Emilie Sagée is recorded by her employer, the school principal, Mr Buch (circa 1845) in his book *"Sounds of Footsteps at the Frontiers of Another Life [Bruits de pas sur les frontieres d'une autre vie]"*.

It is beyond the scope of this work to explore the description and evidence for each of these categories. Suffice to say that they are common to all human civilizations and there are several examples in Scripture.¹²⁷

One of the most noteworthy modern examples of 'crisis apparition' involves a highly credible Biblical translator and theological scholar, and the apparition of a well-known Christian author.¹²⁸

¹²⁷ 1Sa 28:8 – The incident between Saul and the witch of Endor is perhaps the best known example as she summons the spirit-soul of the prophet Samuel. Various encounters with Jesus are included in the Gospels in which he was suspected of being a ghost or where he specifically proved that he was not one rather than dismissing the notion as superstition: Mat 14:26 – *"When they saw him walking on the water, they were terrified. 'It's a ghost!' they said, and screamed with fear";* Mar 6:49 – *"but they saw him walking on the water. 'It's a ghost!' they thought, and screamed";* Luk 24:37 – *"They were terrified, thinking that they were seeing a ghost";* Luk 24:39 – *"Look at my hands and my feet, and see that it is I myself. Feel me, and you will know, for a ghost doesn't have flesh and bones, as you can see I have."* Also, in Act 12:14-16, with Peter's incarceration and released by the angel, the other followers seem to have thought it was his Vardoger knocking on the door rather than himself: *"Recognizing Peter's voice, in her joy she did not open the gate but ran in and reported that Peter was standing at the gate. They said to her, 'You are out of your mind.' But she kept insisting that it was so, and they kept saying, 'It is his angel!' But Peter continued knocking, and when they opened, they saw him and were amazed."* Act 12:14-16 ESV.

¹²⁸ While considering whether or not to research this topic of Ghosts, Demons and Evil Spirits, there were two events that encouraged me to pursue it: One was personal and the other was the carefully recorded testimony of a highly credible Christian Bible scholar about his encounter with a well-known Christian author – C.S. Lewis. By way of introduction: It is a widely-recognised phenomenon that the deceased are sometimes said to have 'appeared' to their loved-ones shortly after their deaths. This is often attributed to grief or dismissed as wishful thinking or fatigue. However, in several noteworthy cases the surviving family members were not even aware of the individual's passing and the encounters occurred in different ways – some while sleeping and others while they were involved in casual, domestic and unrelated tasks. A carefully recorded event of this nature involves the Christian author and novelist C.S. Lewis who made appearances, and offered words of comfort, to a highly respected Biblical scholar and translator J.B. Phillips. What makes this example compelling is that most people would have no doubts that C.S. Lewis was a Believer. Moreover, J.B. Phillips had no incentive whatsoever to declare his experience other than the compulsion to do so for reasons of honesty. The full account can be found at <http://randalrauser.com/2014/06/j-b-phillips-and-the-ghost-of-c-s-lewis/>.

The concept of 'auras' should no longer be considered unscientific: spontaneous photon emission is measurable, does occur with humans, and even displays a diurnal rhythm consistent with the cortisol cycle.¹²⁹

Animals are also known to detect certain changes of human physiological states, including imminent seizures, undiagnosed cancer and impending death.¹³⁰

Although breath and urine odour may offer possible explanations for the former phenomena, dogs and cats also appear able to sense their owner's 'intentions' over long distances and without any contextual or sensory cues.¹³¹

Therefore, an ability to detect changes in spiritual states should not be dismissed without proper enquiry.

¹²⁹ (1) Kobayashi, M., Kikuchi, D., & Okamura, H. (2009). Imaging of ultraweak spontaneous photon emission from human body displaying diurnal rhythm. *PLoS One*, 4(7), e6256. (2) Wijk, E. P., & Wijk, R. V. (2005). Multi-site recording and spectral analysis of spontaneous photon emission from human body. *Forsch Komplementarmed Klass Naturheilkd*, 12(2), 96-106.

¹³⁰ (1) Brown, S. W., & Goldstein, L. H. (2011). Can Seizure-Alert Dogs predict seizures? *Epilepsy Res*, 97(3), 236-242. (2) Dalziel, D. J., Uthman, B. M., McGorray, S. P., & Reep, R. L. (2003). Seizure-alert dogs: a review and preliminary study. *Seizure*, 12(2), 115-120. (3) Dosa, D. M. (2007). A day in the life of Oscar the cat. *N Engl J Med*, 357(4), 328-329.

¹³¹ Sheldrake, R. (1999) *Dogs that Know When Their Owners are Coming Home: and other unexplained powers of animals*. New York, NY: Crown, 1999 (second edition 2011).

WHY BOTHER ABOUT THESE PHENOMENA?

Why bother? Firstly, and purely from a scientific point of view, the present level of evidence should prompt a suspension of disbelief. In other words, scientists – who abide by their own rules of not dismissing observations that are in conflict with their own theories – should reconsider their position in the light of recent scientific findings.

The pursuit is not magic but mechanism. Unfortunately, mechanism requires comprehension of the underlying physics and this may not yet be at our disposal. It would be unhelpful to dismiss observations for want of explanations. So, please engage.

On a practical note:

- I would also like to encourage people who are grieving for lost loved ones, and those who comfort them – particularly in the healthcare professions – not to dismiss, trivialise, or even pronounce interactions with the spirit-soul residua of the deceased as evil when these are of a loving and comforting nature; temporary in duration (1 week to 1 month); and do not lead to ungodly grief. There are many examples of reconciliation and forgiveness that have resulted from such interactions.
- I wish to express my deepest appreciation for those Christian Theologians, - Psychiatrists, -Counsellors and Pastors who have been willing to engage in this challenging area – to fulfill the mandate to set captives free. I would like to encourage you to continue seeking the guidance of the Holy Spirit on how to deal with these various manifestations – especially those that interfere with sanity, mental health, or the fulfillment of God's calling on people's lives.

The wide range of observations suggests that more than one underlying mechanism or spirit-soul component may be involved. **FR** is not inconsistent with a Judeo-Christian worldview and it would be far more productive to weigh in on the discussion than to avoid the topic altogether. From a spiritual perspective there are many valid reasons to continue the search. Most have been listed in the text.

However, the large body of empirical scientific evidence for **FR** actually demands that the concept of soul migration and human spirit-soul possession regains the appropriate attention it once had.

Let us therefore remain humble and teachable as we work out our own salvation with fear and trembling.

James warned: “*have you not then made distinctions among yourselves and become judges with evil thoughts?*” **James 2:4 ESV**, whereas Jesus encouraged us all: “*Do not judge by appearances, but judge with right judgment.*” **John 7:21-24 ESV**.¹³²

¹³² **MSWV**. It is my opinion that the evidence requires us to re-examine and possibly expand (1) our theological premises; (2) our theoretical foundations; and (3) the practical applications of engaging, responding to, and if necessary cleaning and removing harmful spiritual entities and human spirit-soul residua. *The times of ignorance God overlooked, but now he commands all people everywhere to repent, because he has fixed a day on which he will judge the world in righteousness by a man whom he has appointed; and of this he has given assurance to all by raising him from the dead*". Act 17:30-31 ESV. **Let us therefore pursue our unity in Christ and let us be deliberate in overcoming unclean and unrighteous aspects of our lives – both intrinsic and extrinsic. Just as the apostle Paul says, let us “cleanse ourselves from every defilement of body and spirit, bringing holiness to completion in the fear of God”** ¹³². It is my hope that this work will facilitate both.

Chapter 14:

Understanding
Dead Human
Spirits

The Scriptural Evidence of Dead Human Spirits.

Both Hebrew and Christian Scripture present each human being as living in two worlds at the same time, a physical world and a spiritual world. Every human being has the capability of being aware of both worlds at the same time. Not all living persons recognize this reality, as the spiritual world may be easily ignored especially when the focus of daily life is on the immediate needs of the physical world.¹³³



In some genuine way, the spiritual universe is overlaying the physical universe. In some real way what happens in the spiritual world impacts what occurs in the physical world.¹³⁴

There is also a parallel view that what occurs in the physical world has an impact upon the spiritual world.¹³⁵

There is an organic unity between the body, mind, soul, spirit, and the image of the Creator in every person.¹³⁶ The physical body allows the person to live in the physical world and is the "embodiment of the whole man in the observable world".¹³⁷

The "spirit" allows the person to live in the spiritual world and so must not be neglected, indeed must be nurtured.¹³⁸ The "soul" allows the person to interact with other persons at a deeper-than-conscious level. The "Image of the Creator" allows deep, genuine contact with the Creator.

¹³³ John 3 records the Son of Man's explanation of being born in both worlds yet needing a "new" birth of the Spirit within the spiritual world for a man to be capable of entering the Kingdom of the Creator. The Hebrew prophet Elisha prayed that the Creator would open the eyes of his servant so he could see the horses and chariots of fire that surrounded them, protecting them from the enemy. 2 Kings 6:15-17 254 Matthew 4:4, 6:33, 16:25-26

¹³⁴ Revelation 12:7-12 for only one example.

¹³⁵ Matthew 16:19, 18:18

¹³⁶ See the "The Creation of Humanity" section.

¹³⁷ James D.G. Dunn, "Spirit" "*pneuma*", *The New International Dictionary of New Testament Theology*, Vol. 3, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House, 1979), pg. 694.

¹³⁸ For some examples: Psalm 37:1- 6; Ecclesiastes 12:1- 13; Matthew 6:33; John 3:3-8; 1 Timothy 4:7-8.

At physical death a person no longer exists in both worlds at the same time and continues to exist only in the spiritual world¹³⁹. The aspects of humanity that allow life in the spiritual world are separated from the aspects of humanity that allow life in the physical world.

"At death the soul is separated from the body, and man's integral nature is disrupted.¹⁴⁰ The "soul" returns to the Creator and the body returns to the earth. The spirit continues to live in the spiritual world. "... The dead person can be thought of simply as *pneuma* (*spirit*), as belonging wholly to the spiritual realm."¹⁴¹

This is not the ancient Greek concept of an immortal spirit being imprisoned in a physical body and the spirit being "released" from its prison by the death of the body.

This is the Hebrew concept that a living physical body unites all these aspects of humanity, and that with the death of the body, there is a real separation of those aspects.

There is also the Hebrew and Christian understanding that there will be an immortal "spiritual" body that reunites all of a person's humanity following the resurrection from the dead.¹⁴²

This body will be quite different from the present physical body in that it allows eternal life in the spiritual world.¹⁴³ There is also the Christian teaching that the physical bodies of those who follow the Son of Man and are still alive at His return will be transformed into "spiritual" bodies as well.¹⁴⁴

Hebrew scripture is very vague concerning both the state of the spirit following death and the resurrection body. Christian scripture is a bit vague about the intermediate state in which a person awaits for the reintegration of the soul and body.

Paul refers to it as being "naked", the garment of the body being removed leaving the humanity without covering, something he wished to avoid by the Son of Man returning prior to his death so his body could be transformed.¹⁴⁵

There is evidence in Scripture that a person can make the conscious choice at the moment of death to assign his spirit into the presence of the Creator.

¹³⁹ Matthew 22:32; Mark 12:27; Luke 20:38

¹⁴⁰ Hughes, Philip E., *Commentary on the Second Epistle to the Corinthians*, (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1962), pg. 171.

¹⁴¹ Dunn, *op cit.*, pg. 694. See also Luke 24:37, 39; 1 Timothy 3:16; Hebrews 12:23; 1 Peter 3:18-20, 4:6. 263 264

¹⁴² Psalm 16:9-11, Job 19:26-27, Luke 20:35-36, 1 Corinthians 15:36-54, Revelation 20:6

¹⁴³ 1 Corinthians 15:35-49, 2 Corinthians 5:1-5

¹⁴⁴ Philippians 3:21

¹⁴⁵ 2 Corinthians 5:3

The strongest evidence comes from the Son of Man¹⁴⁶ Himself.

He apparently knew that His Soul, His Life, would return to the Creator, that His Body would be buried in a borrowed tomb, but He made a conscious choice at the moment of His death to send His spirit into the Hands of the Creator. *"Father, into Your Hands I commit My Spirit."*¹⁴⁷

The first Christian Martyr Stephen¹⁴⁸ followed His example but implored the Son of Man to "receive" his spirit at the moment of his death. The third example is that of King David¹⁴⁹ although it cannot be assumed that these are his final words.

Both Hebrew and Christian scriptures mention the existence of the spirits of those who have died as being present and identifiable by those who are still alive.



These disembodied human spirits are described in Scripture as "ghosts", the English translation of the Hebrew word *'obh*¹⁵⁰, and of the Greek words, *phantasma*¹⁵¹ and *pneuma*¹⁵².

"The Biblical references... seem to suggest some form of specter or apparition from the realm of the dead."¹⁵³ These are also described in Hebrew scripture as being the "shades"¹⁵⁴ that inhabit "Sheol", the place of the dead or the nether world.

¹⁴⁶ We are intentionally using this self-designation of Y'shua Ha'Mashiach, in an attempt to avoid triggering programming for readers who are survivors of mind-control. The name "Jesus" is installed regularly in the programming as a way to separate the survivor from their only real source of healing.

¹⁴⁷ Luke 23:46

¹⁴⁸ Acts 7:59

¹⁴⁹ Psalm 31:5

¹⁵⁰ Isaiah 8:19, 29:4

¹⁵¹ Matthew 14:26; Mark 6:49

¹⁵² Luke 24:37, 39

¹⁵³ R.K Harrison, "Ghost", *The International Standard Bible Encyclopedia*, Vol. 2 (Grand Rapids, Michigan: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1982), pg.460.

¹⁵⁴ The Hebrew word is *repha'im*, which literally means "ghosts of the dead", are mentioned in Job 26:5, Psalm 88:10, Proverbs 2:18; Isaiah 14:9, 26:14, 19

In Christian scripture, there is a clearer understanding that ultimately every human spirit ends up in close relationship with the Creator or excluded from the presence of the Creator forever. But even Christian scripture does not rule out the possibility of a human spirit remaining on the earth following the death of the body.

The Son of Man did not dispute the existence of such disembodied human spirits. He did not ridicule His disciples when they mistook Him for a ghost as He walked on the water of Sea of Galilee.

Rather, He called out to them to take courage, to refuse to give into their fear, and to recognize Him.¹⁵⁵

Later, following His crucifixion and resurrection, He made it clear that His Resurrection Body was not that of a ghost by inviting the disciples to touch Him. *"A ghost does not have flesh and bones, as you see I have."*¹⁵⁶

He also asked for a piece of broiled fish and ate it in their presence. By inference, the teaching is that a living human being cannot physically touch a disembodied human spirit nor can it eat, but that a living person can see it. That sight of a ghost often causes great fear!

Scripture records two separate instances when the disembodied human spirit of a righteous person was allowed to be seen in the physical world and to have a conversation with a living human being. The Hebrew record is that of King Saul asking the medium¹⁵⁷ of Endor to conjure the spirit of a Hebrew prophet.¹⁵⁸

The disembodied spirit of Samuel appeared and conversed with Saul at some length, delivering the same message he had given during his life to the disobedient king, a message of rejection and judgment. That this could not have been a demon that appeared to be Samuel is proven by the message itself and the truth of the prophecy. No demon can accurately predict the future nor speak the truth.¹⁵⁹

The Christian record is that of the Son of Man on the Mount of Transfiguration was observed by His disciples speaking with the disembodied spirits of Moses and Elijah concerning *"His departure, which He was about to bring to fulfillment at Jerusalem."*¹⁶⁰

Again it is obvious that these two could not have been demons in disguise, deceiving the Son of Man and discussing His crucifixion, death and resurrection.

¹⁵⁵ Matthew 14:27 NIV

¹⁵⁶ Luke 24:39 NIV

¹⁵⁷ The Hebrew word is best-translated "necromancer", someone who summons and talks with the spirits of the dead.

¹⁵⁸ 1 Samuel 28: 3-19. Saul was condemned for this action even though the disembodied human spirit of the prophet was sent. See 1 Chronicles 10:13.

¹⁵⁹ See the section " Fallen and Still Falling".

¹⁶⁰ Luke 9:31 NIV, the parallel versions are Matthew 17:3 and Mark 9:4.

They were in fact adding the testimony of the Law (Moses) and the Prophets (Elijah) to the ministry of the Son of Man.

If it takes three witnesses to confirm the reality of a righteous disembodied human spirit being able to talk with living humans, consider the evidence of Samuel, Moses and Elijah.

There is no direct record in the Scriptures that evil disembodied human spirits also conversed with living humans. The indirect evidence has to do with the Creator's prohibition against the practice of conversing with disembodied human spirits¹⁶¹ normally called "mediumship" or "necromancy".

Christian scripture does not lift that absolute prohibition; instead Christians are assured that their departed loved ones are safe with the Son of Man and would return with Him at the end of time¹⁶².

The possibility remains that what these mediums conjured and conversed with were in fact demons in disguise, although that is not directly stated in Hebrew Scripture. The other possibility still remains that the mediums and necromancers conversed with the "spirits of the dead" as well.¹⁶³

The evidence of dissociated human spirits in Scripture must also be taken seriously. **A dissociated human spirit is:**

- 1) A **part of the mind and spirit of a living person** that has been connected to another living person so it may see and hear what the other person is doing or saying; or
- 2) A **part of the mind and spirit of a living human** being spiritually projected through the physical realm into the presence of others.

Hebrew scripture presents the prophet Elisha sending part of his mind and spirit with his servant Gehazi who used his relationship with the prophet for personal profit.

When Gehazi returned, having deceived a grateful man and received some silver and clothing, which he carefully hid, Elisha knew what his servant had done and condemned him for his lies and covetousness.¹⁶⁴

¹⁶¹ Leviticus 19:31; Deuteronomy 18:10-14; 1 Chronicles 10:13-14, Isaiah 8:19-20

¹⁶² 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18; 1 Corinthians 15:17-19

¹⁶³ Isaiah 19:3 seems to imply that the Egyptian mediums conversed with both fallen angels and disembodied human spirits. Isaiah 8:19 makes it clearer that the Egyptian mediums consulted "the dead on behalf of the living". The prohibition of Deuteronomy 18: 11 can be understood only if this was indeed the practice of those living in the land.

¹⁶⁴ 2 Kings 5:20-27. The Hebrew Scriptures use the word *leb* "heart" in this passage, which is translated both "spirit" and "heart" in the various translations. Nevertheless something of the consciousness of Elisha went with Gehazi and overheard the conversation.

The mind and spirit of prophet Ezekiel was taken to Jerusalem to see for himself what had been erected in the Temple and what was truly being worshipped there, this while his body sat in his house in Babylon with the elders of Judah present.¹⁶⁵

Christian scripture presents the apostle Paul as "able, while still in this life, to leave the body temporarily and to project himself through the physical realm into the presence of others or into heaven."¹⁶⁶

The Body of Messiah in Corinth was to discipline an immoral man by excluding him from their fellowship "*even though I am not physically present, I am with you in spirit.*"¹⁶⁷ Paul delights with the Body of Messiah in Colosse, "*for though I am absent from you in body, I am present with you in spirit and delight to see how orderly you are and how firm your faith in Christ is.*"¹⁶⁸

Paul is not certain if he was "caught up to Paradise... in the body or apart from the body" when he heard "inexpressible things".¹⁶⁹ The apostle John is more certain that he was "in the spirit" when he was taken before the Throne of Heaven and received his enigmatic revelation.¹⁷⁰

If the testimony of three witnesses is required to prove a righteous living person may receive information while his spirit is dissociated from his body, consider the evidence of Elisha, Ezekiel, Paul and John.

Scripture is silent concerning evil dissociated human spirits receiving information or knowing what another person has seen or heard.

¹⁶⁵ Ezekiel 8:1-11:25.

¹⁶⁶ Dunn, *op cit.*, pg. 694.

¹⁶⁷ 1 Corinthians 5:3 NIV

¹⁶⁸ Colossians 2:5

¹⁶⁹ 2 Corinthians 12:2-4 NIV

¹⁷⁰ Revelation 1:10; 4:2

Witchcraft: Dead Human Spirits.

- **INTRODUCTION**

There is some Scriptural understanding that a person can decide what to do with his spirit at the moment of death. If a person can assign his spirit into the presence of the Creator at the moment of death, then it must also be possible for a person who fears or hates the Creator to choose to send his or her spirit somewhere else within the spiritual world other than to the Creator.

If the choice is made to send their spirit into the realm of the fallen angels and the demons, then to that realm it apparently goes. But if it is understood the fallen angel world is not a fit place for human spirits, then the choice can be made to send their spirit into another human being who can "protect" them from the Creator, or to attach themselves to another human being they care about, or to "return" to the spiritual location that overlays a beloved physical place.

Those who have been willing accomplices in their own deception during life know about the choice that is possible after death, indeed, it is one of their great "secrets" which has been passed down through the generations. These have lived their lives as though the Creator did not exist but, due to the Image of the Creator at the very core of their own beings, are incapable of quenching the nagging doubts that maybe they are not the masters of their own fate. Sending one's own spirit into "eternal life" apart from the Creator is the personal goal of every occult group.

Most people do not even know that the choice exists since neither the Christian assembly nor the Jewish synagogue makes that part of their teaching. The Christian belief is that the spirit automatically goes into the presence of the Creator. Some secular authors suggest this to be the case based on their investigation of near death experiences.

Seldom is any thought given or discussion made with the dying in the course of their fatal illnesses in regard to the destination of the spirit, as the condition of the soul is the primary concern of spiritual advisors.

If a person does not know where to send his or her spirit, then the spirit is apparently vulnerable to be trapped or held by the will of others who do understand the spiritual world and who send fallen angels to capture the human spirit.

If a person was killed in a traumatic way, the human spirit may be still trying to resolve the death and remain in the physical location of the death or near the grave.

If a person who dies cannot bear to leave the one he loves, a husband, for example, may choose for his spirit to stay near his wife, or even in their home. If the people who care for the one who has died refuse to allow him to leave, they can seemingly hold his spirit although he must also be involved in choosing to stay.

If some important issue remains unresolved at the time of death, the human spirit may choose to remain, believing he can help solve the matter.

If a person no longer lives in both worlds at the same time, and now continues to live in the spiritual world only, then the person must retain consciousness even though the body and brain are no longer functioning. The mind and spirit are, by their very nature, of a spiritual substance.

The death of the body means that the mind and spirit are now permanently separated from the body, but does not result in the loss of consciousness, only in the ability of the mind to communicate with others through the body and brain.

This separation prevents the human spirit from communicating with living persons in the same way it did prior to death as it can no longer be "seen" or "heard" clearly in the physical world.

Since consciousness is retained, the character of the individual must also be retained following the death of the body. The disembodied human spirit will continue to live with the same addictions, compulsions, and obsessions that were created during life.

The genuine condition of the "heart" becomes self-evident, as the body is no longer present to mask the real intentions of the heart. The thoughts of the mind, emotions, memories, concerns, worries, and joys must be retained as well. The ability to respond to them would now be greatly limited since the spirit and mind are separated from a physical body.

If it is the physical body which constantly reminds a human being of the passage of time, then it makes sense that to be separated from the body means that the human mind and spirit is no longer as aware of the passage of time, and it may indeed be oblivious to time.

Since there is no longer the need to sleep, the human mind and spirit may always be alert. That the spirit is alert does not mean that it is constantly paying attention to what is occurring in the physical world, it may indeed be lost in its own thoughts and memories, relatively oblivious to and separated from the physical universe.

Since the physical body was created to live in the physical world, the loss of the body leaves the mind and spirit in a spiritual world. No physical barrier can prevent the mind and spirit from going where it chooses within the particular spiritual world it has chosen at the moment of death.

If the choice is to send one's spirit to the Creator, being locked in a concrete prison cell does not prevent the spirit from traveling to the Creator.

If the choice is to send one's spirit into the fallen angel world, dying in an intensive care unit of a Christian hospital does not prevent the spirit from traveling to that spiritual place.

If the choice is to send one's spirit to a physical location, or into a descendant, or to haunt the halls of the hospital, then the spirit can travel through physical objects as if they were not there, for in the spiritual universe, the physical objects are not "there".

Conversely, since the physical body is no longer there, the human spirit cannot "reach out and touch" a living person nor can it move physical objects.

That these phenomena do occur may be explained by the presence of the demons who can move physical objects or give the powerful illusion of physical contact to living humans.

The demons collected during one's lifetime continue to be attached to the mind and spirit. These can be intentionally summoned and sent or unconsciously allowed to do things to get the attention of a living person. The same comment can be made about the presence of a human spirit creating a "cold space" around them which living persons can feel.

The demons can both actually lower the temperature of the air and an object and create the powerful illusion that the air or object is extremely cold.

There does indeed seem to be a spiritual barrier between the obedient spiritual universe and the rebellious spiritual universe, so that once the choice is made at the moment of death, the mind and spirit sent to either of these cannot make a contrary choice.

The evidence is not as clear concerning the ultimate destiny of those who send their mind and spirit into the spiritual world which overlays the physical world. It may be that once the issue which kept the human spirit "tethered" within this spiritual world is resolved that the mind and spirit can go on to it's ultimate destiny.

If the human mind and spirit can remain "trapped" or "tethered" within the spiritual world which overlays our physical world, then it stands to reason that it can also be attached or connected to a living human being.

That attachment can be for a benevolent or a malevolent purpose, motivated by love or hatred, and sent to help or hinder the recipient. That most people with the Western "scientific" mindset are oblivious to the presence of these disembodied human spirits goes without saying.

Yet many others have reported that they have "felt" the presence of a loved one telling them "good-bye" following their death. Others still have reported the "feeling" that their beloved has not truly left them even though the body has been cremated or buried.

Those who believe they "comprehend and control" the spiritual domain which is the arena of contention between the Creator and the deceiver, must be able to send their disembodied human mind and spirit into another person at the moment of the death.

That which is "sent" is a spiritual entity (the mind and the spirit) and the one who "receives" this spiritual entity is a person capable of living in two worlds at the same time, indeed has been taught to do so. It would also make sense that they would send their mind and spirit only into a person who has been properly prepared to give them the space to "live" in their disembodied form and who would appreciate the largeness of this gift.

*Mark McCall, Dr. Kenneth; Healing the Family Tree,
(London, England: Sheldon Press), 1982.
His other two books are Healing the Haunted
(London, England: Estelle House), 1989,
And A Guide to Healing the Family Tree
(Carberry, Scotland: The Handsel Press, Ltd.), 1994.*

Witchcraft and Multi-Generational Fertility Cults.

The human "soul" of a witch is perceived to be mortal, in that if it ever completely loses contact with some human body, it will disappear into the "ether" and be lost forever. In truth, that which is transferred into the lineage is the mind and spirit of the witch since the "soul", the life, returns to the Creator at death.

At the moment of death, the witch makes the choice to "send" her spirit into one of her descendants, typically a child or grandchild. Often the recipient is physically present at the moment of death. Sometimes the recipient is required to physically take the life of the witch, by knife (at a ceremony) or by strangulation or suffocation (in a hospital).

Other times the recipient is required to lie on top of the witch as she breathes her last breath and so "breathe in" her "soul" as the last breathe is breathed in by the child. It is understood that a witch can simply "give up" her "soul" by an act of her will and depart, leaving behind her dead body.

Usually there is physical contact between the witch and the recipient at the moment of death and the transfer. At other times, when the witch has already transferred part of her mind and spirit into one or more of her descendants, she can assign her "soul" to one or more of her descendants even if they are not physically present at the moment of her death.

Most multigenerational fertility cult members have an intense superstitious fear of being sent back and "trapped" in the dead body, which can be buried, leaving the witch without any way of escape. Often a witch will request that her body be cremated following her death so there is no body for her to be "sent back" to and so be "trapped."

It is perceived by multigenerational fertility cults that once the "soul" is "free" of the limitations of the physical body he or she may enjoy "eternal life" by living forever through the oppression of her descendants.

Once the "soul" is successfully transferred into the descendants, it is perceived that her "soul" can be split an infinite number of times so that every descendant will be subject to her "power" and learn from her "wisdom".

The "soul" once transferred in this way, can then be transferred on down through the lineage, even being transferred through a ritual to an unborn child while he or she is still in the mother's uterus.

The goal of this transfer is to remain "alive" through the descendants until the date in the future when the "righteous" dead will be resurrected by "mother earth". At that time, the "saint" will receive a new body that will live forever (alternately, for a thousand years) on earth with peace and harmony between all living things.

The mind and spirit of the witch is actually not "free" but subject to intense torment by demons she willingly invited into herself during life. This torment is inescapable and far more immediate as the mind and spirit are now disembodied and she can no longer physically evade them.

During her life, the witch strove to "escape" her body through astral travel, dissociation, and introjections of herself into the bodies of others. Now she craves to have a body again so that she may elude their torment.

- **CONFUSING A DEAD HUMAN SPIRIT WITH ANOTHER IDENTITY**

If the descendant's mind and spirit are sufficiently wounded, the witch's mind and spirit may indeed "take over" the body of the descendant from time to time and that may be accepted by both the therapist and the client as another personality whose will must be respected.

A dead human spirit also constantly "talks" to the other personalities internally and even to the mind of the host as it is perceived the host needs his or her "instruction" and "wisdom".

If either of these phenomena is present in the survivor, there will be **"memories" of past life experiences** and often a deeply held belief in **reincarnation**¹⁷¹. The past life "memories" are downloaded just like other memories which are shared between the alters internally with vivid detail. The perception is that the client was really present in the past "life".

There is often a great deal of information given about the "past life" as the dead human mind and spirit "teaches" the alters of the host what he or she believes it is important to "know" in order to gain more "power".

A living witch may also transfer part of his or her "soul" to a child or an infant if there is sufficient wounding in the psyche of the recipient. Normally there must be physical contact and sufficient physical pain to cause the child to dissociate while the transfer is taking place with fallen angel and demon assistance.

If part of the mind and spirit of the witch is transferred to a sufficiently wounded recipient, it can "take over" the body and present as a human alter whose will must be respected.

What is a Human Spirit, Dead Human Spirit, and a Demon?

- **A HUMAN SPIRIT**

A Human spirit is when a living human being astral projects their spirit to places and people.

Astral projection is the idea that one can, with practice, "project" one's consciousness, soul, or spirit, outside of the body while in a sleeping or awake state.



¹⁷¹ This belief in the reincarnation of the "soul" is also called the "transmigration of souls".

They try to “get out” of their bodies while asleep or awake and roam around in their spirit. All the while their body remains open and unguarded. If one leaves their body, it is a very real possibility for another spirit to come in and occupy it as well.

Ecclesiastes 12:6-7 *“Remember him-before the **silver cord** is severed, or the golden bowl is broken; before the pitcher is shattered at the spring, or the wheel broken at the well, and the dust returns to the ground it came from, and **the spirit returns to God** who gave it.”*

The reference to the “silver cord” in the above Bible verse is a reference to the silver cord that is thought to connect our spirit to our body that is at times reported by those who have left their bodies. If this cord is ever severed, we cannot get back into our body. The separation of spirit and flesh becomes final. In other words, we die. Our body then becomes a carcass.

• DEAD HUMAN SPIRITS

- A Dead Human Spirit (DHS) is a person who has died without knowing Jesus as their Messiah and they were very deeply steeped in the occult when they were living. They go to the underworld — a place in hell — and can be called up by satan to be used for his dirty work. A DHS is also called a disembodied spirit.
- There can also be DHS hanging around a crime scene / accident area / grave yards / places where war took place and many people died.
- There can be DHS in the sea where people drowned.

The above points are very controversial — the Bible schools do not hold this view point but MANY counsellors and pastors and people working in the field of deliverance KNOWS that this is true.

I give you the Scripture that clarifies it for so many who have experienced this in deliverance. This takes place right at the end of time:

Revelation 20:13-15 (KJV) *“13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. 14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. 15 And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.”*

This also explains that the ancestors who the First Peoples of all nations worship and fear, really DO exist – for example the African people worship and fear their ancestors who control their every move – nothing is done if they do not consult the dead and bring sacrifices for the dead¹⁷² – this is exactly what the Word forbids us to do! It is only people who die as Believers in Jesus as their Messiah, who will go to Heaven.

God warns His people NOT to contact the dead when they get to the Promised Land and see the practices of the pagan nations — why would He say that if it was not possible? The judgment for contacting the dead was very severe.

¹⁷² For more information, see our book “Africa Come Forth Out Of Bondage”.

Practical Ministry.

It is important to note that you cannot bind a human spirit or a dead human spirit. That will open you up to witchcraft. God has given the human spirit freedom of choice.



•DEAD HUMAN SPIRITS

You pray and ask God to send His Escort Angels to remove these dead human spirits and to take them to the place that HE has ordained for them to go.

If the Holy Spirit leads you, you can preach the Gospel to these DHS and then ask God to send His Angels to take them to the place that He has ordained for them to go.

We have many examples of where believers have prayed at battle-grounds/accident scenes, etc., where many soldiers/people had died. There had been much spiritual activity in that area. (In the case of accident scenes, more accidents were taking place at the exact same place – as blood calls for more blood to be spilt.)

The believers were led to preach the Gospel and then they prayed for God to send His Angels to come and fetch the DHS and to take them to the place that He had ordained for them to go.

Another example is where people have reported “ghosts” / spirits of dead relatives hang around homes, rooms, buildings, and so forth. One then needs to go and spiritually “clean” the area, stand in the gap and repent of any sin that took place – like sexual sin, rape, murder, and so forth – and then ask the Father to send His Escort Angels to remove all DHS from the place.

Also bind the demons and send to the Feet of Jesus to be His Footstool. Cut the building / home / ground loose from every demonic portal¹⁷³ and then close these portals in the Name of Jesus. Also cut free from sun, moon, stars, constellations and fallen angels as well as four levels of the spirit – heavens, earth, waters, under the earth. Cleanse the four elements¹⁷⁴ and dedicate these elements to the Lord God of Israel.

Understanding DHS activity will encourage us to pray at every accident / murder scene (anywhere where people have died) and to silence the blood that has been spilt with the Blood of Y’shua (Jesus). Not doing so leaves the altar of sacrifice in the spirit standing to call for more blood.

¹⁷³ See prayer at the end of this article.

¹⁷⁴ For additional study, see our book *“The Four Elements”*.

Understanding this truth about DHS, helps us to realize that our problem is not with demons – demons we can bind and cast out in the Name of Y'shua (Jesus) – our biggest problem in spiritual warfare is when we don't know about DHS and when we don't know how to pray about this very real problem in the spiritual domain.

- **FEAR**

Fear is a very real factor that will stop people from praying about DHS. If you have believed for years that the ancestors will punish you if you don't listen to them, then it will be very difficult to take up your God-ordained authority in the Name of Y'shua (Jesus) and deal with them as God has commissioned us to.

- **HUMAN SPIRITS, ASTRAL PROJECTION**

Again, you cannot bind a human spirit – this opens you up to witchcraft. When you sense a human spirit projecting into your room you can also preach the Gospel to them – they normally leave as fast as possible! – and again you ask God to send His Escort Angels to remove this human spirit and to return them to their body.

There are some people that have prayed for God to cut their silver cord that means that they will die as we learned from the scriptures. I personally will be very careful to pray this and one will have to really have heard from God to do so. If you have not heard from God it makes you a murderer!

- **A DEMON (EVIL SPIRIT)**

Evil spirit — a spirit tending to cause harm.

- **ADDITIONAL INFORMATION ON DEAD HUMAN SPIRITS**

There are NO Scriptures that confirm ghosts are demons and not spirits of the dead - there are passages where it appears the dead could appear in the world of the living.

***Isaiah 29:4** “And you shall be laid low [Jerusalem], speaking from beneath the ground, and your speech shall come humbly from the dust. And **your voice shall be like that of a ghost** [produced by a medium] coming from the earth, and your speech shall whisper and squeak as **it chatters from the dust.**”*

The Lord defines someone who is dead speaking from under the earth as a voice of a ghost.

***Job 4:15-17** “Then a spirit passed before my face; the hair of my flesh stood up! 16 [The spirit] stood still, but I could not discern the appearance of it. A form was before my eyes; there was silence, and then I heard a voice, saying, 17 Can mortal man be just before God, or be more right than He is? Can a man be pure before his Maker, or be more cleansed than He is?”*

Job identifies the person speaking to him as a ghost. He had the face of a man but was not someone Job knew.

***Psalms 31:17** “Let me not be put to shame, O Lord, or disappointed, for I am calling upon You; let the wicked be put to shame, **let them be silent in Sheol** (the place of the dead).”*

David prayed against voices of the dead.

Dead Human Spirits who have died offering themselves to satan — will form armies of the dead that will rise up against the children of God. Praying against **armies of the dead** is different to praying against demons. You have to ask God to give command to His angels to take them captive to their eternal dwellings.

The Difference between Fallen Angels and Demons.

In our opinion there is a difference between demons and fallen angels. Fallen angels are the angels that followed Lucifer in the rebellion. They are demented, twisted malicious and sadistic creatures and can manifest in our time / space continuum and appear in a variety of forms, even as an angel of light.

We believe demons are not fallen angels, they are the disembodied spirits of the Nephilim¹⁷⁵ that were killed in the flood. In order to manifest in this dimension they must possess something.

We clearly see from the Bible that Jesus has power over the demons and casts them out. Man becomes free of the demons.

The Great Commission in the Word calls each one of us who believe in Jesus to set the captives free and cast out demons

Different names given to demons:

- [Bad fairy](#) — a fairy that tends to cause harm.
- [Bogey](#), [bogie](#), [bogy](#) — an evil spirit.
- [Daemon](#), [daimon](#), [demon](#), [devil](#), [fiend](#) — an evil supernatural being.
- [Cacodaemon](#), [cacodemon](#) — an evil spirit.
- [Ghoul](#) — an evil spirit or ghost.
- [Goblin](#), [hob](#), [hobgoblin](#) — (folklore) a small grotesque supernatural creature that makes trouble for human beings.
- [Kelpie](#), [kelpy](#) — (Scottish folklore) water spirit in the form of a horse that likes to drown its riders.
- [Lamia](#), [vampire](#) — (folklore) a corpse that rises at night to drink the blood of the living.

ISAIAH 61:1-4

1 The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me, because the Lord has anointed *and* qualified me to preach the Gospel *of* good tidings to the meek, the poor, *and* afflicted; He has sent me to bind up *and* heal the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the [physical and spiritual] captives and the opening of the prison *and* of the eyes to those who are bound,

¹⁷⁵ For additional study on Nephilim, please see “*TODAY, As In The Days Of Noah?!*”

2 To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord [the year of His favor] [**a**]and the day of vengeance of our God, to comfort all who mourn,

3 To grant [consolation and joy] to those who mourn in Zion—to give them an ornament (a garland or diadem) of beauty instead of ashes, the oil of joy instead of mourning, the garment [expressive] of praise instead of a heavy, burdened, *and* failing spirit—that they may be called oaks of righteousness [lofty, strong, and magnificent, distinguished for uprightness, justice, and right standing with God], the planting of the Lord, that He may be glorified.

4 And they shall rebuild the ancient ruins; they shall raise up the former desolations and renew the ruined cities, the devastations of many generations.

Prayers for Protection.

- **DEMONS**

Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth please places a **five meter perimeter of protection** around this room, office, home, and/or ministry.

We ask You to send **warrior angels** to come in and bind up any demons that may be here. We take authority over every demon, we **bind** you and we **strip you of all your power, authority, weapons, illusions, and armour in the Name of Y'shua!** We now **take anything that you have sent in or brought into** this room, office, home, and/or ministry, including any **hexes, vexes, spells, curses, incantation, witchcraft, sorcery, assignments or claims** and we **send you and all your garbage to the Feet of Y'shua our Messiah!**

- **HUMAN SPIRITS**

Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth if there are any **astral projections** or **foreign witchcraft human spirits** in this room, office, home, and/or ministry please encapsulate them in **witchcraft proof, sound proof, spiritual evil proof capsules** and return all of their demons to them along with all their garbage.

Then please take the **capsules** to Your Feet and hold them there for the time period You allow. Please make it so they cannot send or receive anything. Please make them **deaf, dumb, and blind.**

- **OPENINGS AND OBJECTS**

Father, if there are any **portals, gateways, dimensional doorways, patios, porches, balconies or windows** open anywhere in the office/home/ministry please bend back what is on the backside of those things and return it back to whomever sent it.

Your Word teaches me in:

Proverbs 26:2 *"2 Like the sparrow in her wandering, like the swallow in her flying, so the causeless curse does not alight."*

I have no desire to hurt or harm anyone, but I have no desire to play any demonic or witchcraft games. Your Word sends every curse back to the sender!

Then Lord, please destroy the **portal, gateway, dimensional doorway or window**. If there are any **objects** in the office/home ministry through which things are being sent please **seal** them so nothing can be sent or received. Holy Spirit, please show me what is being used as a contact point so that I can destroy and throw it away, in the Name of Y'shua.

- **PATHWAYS**

Lord, if there are any **astral pathways, tunnels, loops, tubes or conduits** here **please bend them back 180 degrees, back to whoever sent it**. Your Word sends every curse back to the sender according to Proverbs 26:2!

Remove it completely from this room, office, home, and/or ministry.

Again Lord, I have no desire to harm or hurt anyone I just have no desire to allow them to cause harm or interfere.

- **BARRIER OF PROTECTION**

Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, I ask You to please place a **barrier of protection** so external witchcraft cannot get through to me or my family / ministry, in the Name of Y'shua. Make it so they **cannot hear or see** anything going on or **send anything** to interfere.

Abba Father, we ask You to place a **three or four meter barrier of confusion** on top of everything so that if external witchcraft tries to come in, it will just get all caught up in the confusion.

Thank You Lord. Now Lord please assign Your Warrior angels to be here with us to watch over and protect us. Holy Spirit please fill this place with Your Presence; guide and direct us.

We ask this in Your Name Messiah Y'shua. Amen.

- **CLEANSING PRAYER FOR YOURSELF**

Through contact with hurting people and/or Ritual Abuse Survivors spiritual stuff can be attached to you and you should get rid of it before going home.

Ask Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth to wash You with His Precious Blood internally and externally and flush out all evil contaminations. Ask Him to reseal you from the top of your head to the bottom of your feet with His precious Blood. Then ask Him to cleanse you from any form of transference and attachments.

Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, we ask You to send Warrior angels to bind any demons attached to me or coming against me in any way. Father, I ask You to strip them of their **power, authority, weapons, illusions, and armour** and that they and anything they sent or brought to me or my room, office, home, be taken to the Feet of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth.

Abba Father, we ask You to send any human spirit attached to me in any way back to the sender. I ask You to please cleanse me from any spiritual evil or attachments in the Name of Y'shua.

- **DEDICATION PRAYER FOR THE OFFICE**

In prayer, dedicate your office as "holy ground" to the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, asking that anything that will not willingly bow in worship to the living God be spiritually removed. Ask that it be sanctified as a healing place for all who enter. Ask that no demon or foreign human spirit be allowed to take executive control of any client who comes into your office.

Ask that any demon who does attempt to interfere with the therapy process be required to declare out-loud that the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth is Saviour and its Lord, and that the Holy Bible contains the Truth about God. Ask that your office be a place where Truth may be clearly heard, seen and responded to by all who come into your office.

Pray the "Lord's Prayer", specifically praying that your office be a place on the face of the earth where His Kingdom can come and His Will be done just as it is being done in Heaven. Ask that He show you anything that needs to be removed from your office that might be used by the demons or human spirits as a channel of entrance or place in which to hide.

- **SOME DEFINITIONS**

- **Hexes** — Sending distress against the spirit (fear, depression, etc..)
- **Vexes** — Sending distress against the body (headaches, pain, etc..)
- **Spells** — Sending actions (sleepiness, seduction, etc..)
- **Incantations** — Spells that are sung or recited in a chant like form by a group.
- **Assignments** — Special tasks assigned to individuals, like bring division within an assembly or ministry or get close to married Christian men and bring them down through sexual misconduct.
- **Claims** — Rights to a specific piece of property or area or to a person.
- **Astral Projections** — Part of the mind and spirit of a person that leaves the body.
- **Foreign Witchcraft Human Spirits** — Part of the mind and spirit of another within someone who leaves the body of the one they are in.
- **Portals (Gateways, Bridges)** — Spiritual doorways through which things can be sent and/or through which things can be heard or seen.
- **Astral Pathways (tunnels, conduits)** — A spiritual pathway from one place to another through which things can be sent and received.



Chapter 15:

Trauma Bonds
to Time, and
Healing the
Effects of
Trauma

Trauma-Bonds to TIME.

Everything created — all matter — is a *potential* battery that can hold a charge, negative or positive. For example — every where the fighting took place in WW1 and WW2, the blood of the LAND cries out. The LAND is a battery — and that defilement is still there ... until cleansed.

On the other hand there is HOLY ground — holy ground is a place where there has been much prayer and Godly activity — the land is positively charged.

Other examples of “batteries”:

1. Paul’s HANDKERCHIEF:

- Paul’s handkerchief (which was created matter) was a charged “battery”. The handkerchief would “hold” Paul’s “charge”. Then, when the handkerchief was placed upon the sick, healing would be DISCHARGED to the person. NOTE!! The healing was NOT of the handkerchief ... it was just a “battery”.

2. Moses’ ROD:

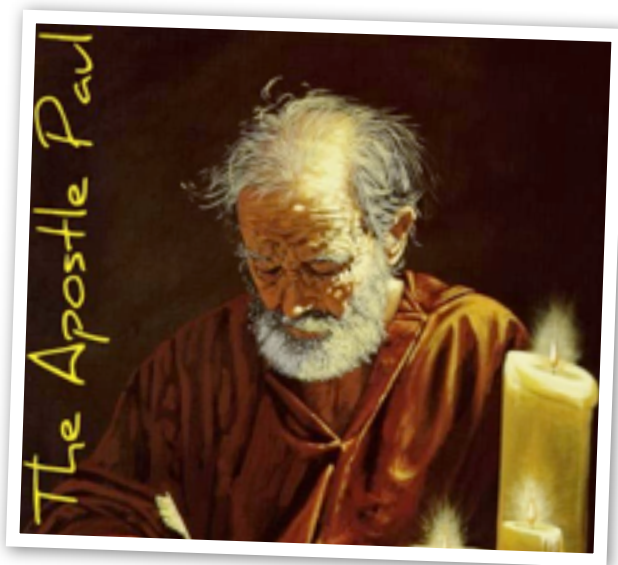
- Moses’ ROD was loaded by GOD, and Moses discharged it in many situations in his lifetime.

3. The BONES of Elisha:

- The bones of Elisha were still so charged after his death, that when a man was buried in Elisha’s grave/cave a few years later, the dead man came ALIVE!!

4. A PERSON can be loaded up:

- A person can be loaded up — and when the person lays their HANDS on someone else, they UNLOAD. CAUTION!! Many people in assemblies are loaded with a NEGATIVE charge, which also gets UNLOADED with the laying on of hands ... this is WHY the Bible says to be CAREFUL who lays hands on you!



Gold as a Godly “Battery”:

QUESTION — what material is the best battery/conductor in all of creation for spiritual charge? ... **GOLD!** (In the natural, GOLD is better than SILVER, because silver tarnishes very easily, which affects the flow of current.) That is why the Holy of Holies was made of GOLD, because it was to be an amazing battery for GOD’s Power and Glory!

Gold as an un-Godly "Battery":

BUT gold can also hold a NEGATIVE charge. An idol (often a piece of wood and covered with GOLD) that was captured from the enemy could NOT be used — it had to be burned!

TIME is also a BATTERY.

TIME is also created matter — so it can also be a battery. TIME holds a charge.

SPIRITUAL TIMING

Ecclesiastes 8:5 "A wise man's heart discerns both time and judgments"

We need to understand as the Body of Messiah, that God has a central principle from which every arena of our lives operates, whether individually or corporately.

It's called "time"...

Within the context of time, lives can move forward with God or be hindered; nations can advance spiritually or regress. It all depends upon our understanding and cooperation with the timings of God.

As soon as you are born again, the sensitivity to the timings of God should be activated in your life. Every moment from that point onward is meant to be lived according to the Will of the Father.

Earth time usually means "rush". Fast food, rush hour traffic, instant this, instant that. To the world, time is an enemy.

The only place that time becomes your friend is in the Spirit realm.

God introduced His timing to us in Genesis Chapter 1:

"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth."

Everything that God did was based on timing - His perfect timing.

Man's timing began with the Fall in Genesis Chapter 3. Man lost his ability to hear and follow God without special endowment from Heaven. He no longer had the ability to operate in God's timing by himself.

Generation after generation produced only trial and trouble unless God intervened.

All through the Old Testament days, God gave direction to the people concerning Himself, through the prophets. They could still know Him and serve Him. Understanding spiritual times, even in those days, came to those committed to God.

1 Chronicles 12:32 *"32 And of Issachar, men who had understanding of the times to know what Israel ought to do, 200 chiefs; and all their kinsmen were under their command;"*

One of the things that Y'shua (Jesus) came and restored for us at Calvary was the ability to perceive and regain the correct timings of God. By receiving His redemption and walking in the Spirit, we can come back into God's times.

By knowing God and His ways we can build the character within ourselves that will position us strategically in the proper season.



When you live in the Spirit, time is lovely. Time is a blessing!

To the Spirit filled man, time means stability and nurturing. Time matures and heals. It brings understanding and abilities. Time expands and deepens our insight. When we walk with time, we walk with patience.

Godly timing produces courage, boldness, security and strength.

God's time is moving forward hour by hour, minute by minute. There are multitudes who seem to think they can live by any schedule

they choose and that, in their own time, they can turn to God. But His time is the right time.

We need to understand the timings and seasons **God ordains** for our lives, ministries, cities and nations.

We need to understand and recognize the divine shifts in your life – moments when God changes the times and seasons.

Isaiah 48:6 "6 You have heard [these things foretold], now you see this fulfillment. And will you not bear witness to it? I show you specified new things from this time forth, even hidden things [kept in reserve] which you have not known."

Isaiah 43:19 "19 Behold, I am doing a new thing! Now it springs forth; do you not perceive and know it and will you not give heed to it? I will even make a way in the wilderness and rivers in the desert."

Isaiah 42:9 "9 Behold, the former things have come to pass, and new things I now declare; before they spring forth I tell you of them."

NEW TESTAMENT TRANSITION

Ephesians 5:15-16 " 15 Look carefully then how you walk! Live purposefully and worthily and accurately, not as the unwise and witless, but as wise (sensible, intelligent people), 16 Making the very most of the time [buying up each opportunity], because the days are evil."

Redeeming the time means "rescue from loss". God can recover and redeem the time through His grace and mercy. (Hurts, loss, trauma, sin in our past that still gives Satan the right to keep us bound)

SEASONS

In the beginning of creation God places the **lights** in the Heavens to be for **signs** and **seasons**, **days** and **years**. Before sin came, God **programmed the seasons to speak of life - spring after winter**.

Although God allows us to experience the other seasons, He said there will always be a Spring. The Word is a reflection / description/ prescription for the seasons (as medicine). God's Word recognizes that there will be troubles, hard times, persecutions, etc. (Winter) BUT there is always a promise of Spring.

After the fall of Adam, the people started to **worship the gods that ruled over the seasons**. They were so dependent upon the seasons for their survival, (planting, sowing, reaping) that they worshipped these gods and performed many gross rituals to appease them. Baal, Asherah, Molech, Astarte, etc. Because of idol worship in families, they started to reap curses which were carried over from generation to generation (Iniquities).

FATHER TIME

He is the **imitator** of Father God. God has the power over life and death and so Father Time imitates that control over our lives and the lives of our children. He is known as the **Keeper of the Seasons**. He gains that right through **sin** and he exercises his domain over you through generations. (Keeps you locked up in the past because of sin, traumas, etc.)

When you die and you are not saved, the **harvester** - the **grim reaper**, with his sickle, comes to fetch you.

So if God is not Lord of our inheritance (bloodline) then the Grim Reaper has legal rights to steal, kill and destroy. **John 10:10** You are robbed of the **abundant life**.



TIME

1. Chronos

Chronos: is the general process of time or chronological time.

The space of time can be long or short and denotes the duration of time.

2. Kairos

It is a period possessing certain characteristics.

Kairos: refers to the right time, the opportune or strategic time, the now time.

Very important! Do not separate these two concepts. Often, they are simply different phases of the same process.

Kairos, in many ways, is an extension or continuation of Chronos. As the processes of God's plans unfold, chronos becomes Kairos.

Perhaps you're in a chronos time where you don't feel like anything exciting is happening. This season of your life may even be tedious – a time of plowing, standing, believing and persistent praying.

You must understand that all of that is part of a bigger picture.

The Chronos season, however frustrating, is not unimportant. If you press on, doing what is necessary in these general times, the process will shift into a Kairos season of Reaping.

Galatians 6:9 *"And let us not lose heart and grow weary and faint in acting nobly and doing right, for in due time (KAIROS) and at the appointed season we shall reap, if we do not loosen and relax our courage and faint."*

Life is a series of changes – a process of going from the old to the new – as well as from Chronos to Kairos.

Time is Cyclical

Every year when some or other high day comes along, it is not a BLANK piece of paper.

HALLOWEEN, an UN-Godly example ...

Every time it comes along, it has been lived many times before — it comes pre-loaded with a whole lot of "creepy crawlies" attached that TIME, based on what has happened on that day in previous years (history).

The FEASTS, a Godly example ...

The Feasts, such as Passover, are also not blank pages. Passover is a day loaded with so many acts of worship by believers all over the world — it has a very different feel than Halloween.

Time ISN'T neutral!!

TIME isn't neutral — it has these spikes during the year. We need to be aware of these spikes, in terms of CLEANSING time, because of the CURSES and DEFILEMENT that rides on these days/times/seasons.

An example of the correlation between suicide and an attempted abortion:

For example, a young mother has an unplanned pregnancy, and thinks about/plans aborting the child — she plans this for 23 May of that year. In the end, she decides to keep the child ... and he is born without any knowledge of the mother's thoughts of abortion.

However, thirty years later, that spirit of death takes the person out with suicide ... WHEN?! 23 May, thirty years later. The time was defiled and carried the curse of death that the mother had placed on it.

TIME Clocks Setup in the Spirit

Time clocks are ANNUAL problems — like SICKNESS, financial loss/problems, RELATIONAL difficulties, Etc.. — that come OVER and OVER AGAIN in a person's life or family ...

Time clocks are PATTERNED:

- (1) Either the DATE is constant/ANNUAL (i.e. 20 May every year, or your BIRTH DATE).
- (2) Or the PERIOD of time is CYCLICAL (i.e. every 3 months).
- (3) Or it can be a TIME-SLOT (i.e., Sunday morning from 9-12 noon, the witches are targeting the assemblies / local fellowships).

These are CURSES on TIME!

We need to UNDERSTAND how the enemy works — the TIMES that are setup to bring DESTRUCTION in our lives are actually the TIMES that GOD has set up and INTENDED for BLESSING to flow into our LIVES!

You were not born “blank” or without purpose — you were born with a timeline that was planned and purposed by GOD. There are places along this timeline that GOD has designed for you to take a leap forward — above and beyond what you have contributed — above and beyond your faith and obedience in walking in His Principles ... these specific times were designed by GOD to be leverage points for you.

However, the enemy also knows our timelines and the leverage places in our lives — and so tries to do everything he can to change those times of intended blessings ... into CURSES.

Whenever we find curses on TIME, we need to cleanse it in order to receive the blessing that GOD intended.

Generational Curses on Time

If you see a devouring pattern operating in your life, you need to ask if this is as a result of your own sin (doors you have opened) — or is it as a result of the sins of your forefathers?

It will be important to look back at your father's and mother's bloodline, and ask if there was any history where devastating things happened to them in a cyclical pattern. Examples include early death patterns, divorce, bankruptcy, rape/violent experiences, and so forth.

Practical Application:

1. Repenting of the sin and a cleansing of time needs to take place ...
2. Time clocks need to be broken with the Hammer of the Word. The cleansing needs to then be brought forward to the current time, to your covenant spouse (if you're married), as well as to your physical and spiritual seed, to a thousand generations.

3. Then you speak and release BLESSINGS over your life/family, into your current time.

A Change in lifestyle MUST be IMPLEMENTED:

Only praying the prayers of repentance/renunciation will NOT bring complete change, even if you pray them 100 times over!

****NOTE!**** For every sin there is a *virtue* — for every wrong behaviour there is a *right behaviour*.

You need to find out what your calling is from ABBA FATHER — this requires voluntarily embracing some kind of pain to be able to get the results that you need.

If you are serious about receiving the blessing that is due you, and that the curses on time be reversed to blessings ... you need to work through the renunciation prayers (repentance) — get rid of the generational sins, and own your own sins and see how you came in agreement with the sins of your forefathers.

You will need to repent and deal with your own sins — however, you will then NEED to start living a lifestyle of acting in the opposite spirit. It could take quite some time to form a lifestyle of living according to GOD's Principles — maybe even fasting and prayer will be necessary to enforce this Godly lifestyle in your life!

But you will NEED to embrace this lifestyle ... embrace the pain that is necessary to pursue your calling — then you will be able to breakthrough to receive every kind of blessing GOD has designed for you to receive during specific seasons. It requires a lifestyle change of doing the works of righteousness that is the opposite of the iniquity.

ROUTINE Cleansing of Time:

We see examples in Scripture, of ROUTINE cleansing of time — such as:

- “Give us TODAY our DAILY bread ...”
- “His Mercies and Loving-Kindness are new every DAY ...”

PRACTICAL Steps in Cleansing Time

When cleansing time, one needs to look at FOUR different areas:

1. Bloodline
2. Marriage Line
3. Adoptive Line
4. Covenant Line (any organization)

And ask GOD to cleanse the time of FIVE things:

1. Sin, rebellion and iniquity.
2. Rebellion.
3. Iniquity.
4. Trauma.
5. All un-Godly covenants.

Then we ask GOD to release all the BLESSINGS that He intended to flow to us at that time/day.

SPACE and TIME

GOD defines the DIMENSIONS within which He operates with us, and where we will be BLESSED as TWO boundaries — (1) SPACE and (2) TIME.

Space:

- 1) The FIRST space set out is the GARDEN.
- 2) After the FALL, we see the boundary stones are set out by the Ten Commandments.
- 3) In Messiah, we see the boundary stones are WRITTEN on our HEARTS — we become Living Tabernacles of set-apart space.

Time:

- 1) In the GARDEN, time is set out as meeting with GOD in the cool of the DAY.
- 2) GOD also sets apart the Seventh Day
- 3) as HOLY:

Genesis 2:2-3 “2 And on the seventh day GOD ended His Work which He had done; and He rested on the seventh day from all His Work which He had done. 3 And GOD blessed (spoke good of) the **seventh day**, set it apart as His own, and **hallowed it**, because on it GOD rested from all His Work which He had created and done.”

- 1) After the EXODUS, time is defined by the FEASTS of GOD, including the Sabbath. It is during the FEASTS, that the heavens are OPENED for a SPECIFIC breakthrough, related to that particular Feast ...

In science we have $E = MC^2$. In the Bible, if we stay WITHIN the bounds of the Covenant (SPACE), and observe GOD's Feasts (TIME) ... then the POWER of the Holy Spirit will be “squared” and at its GREATEST!

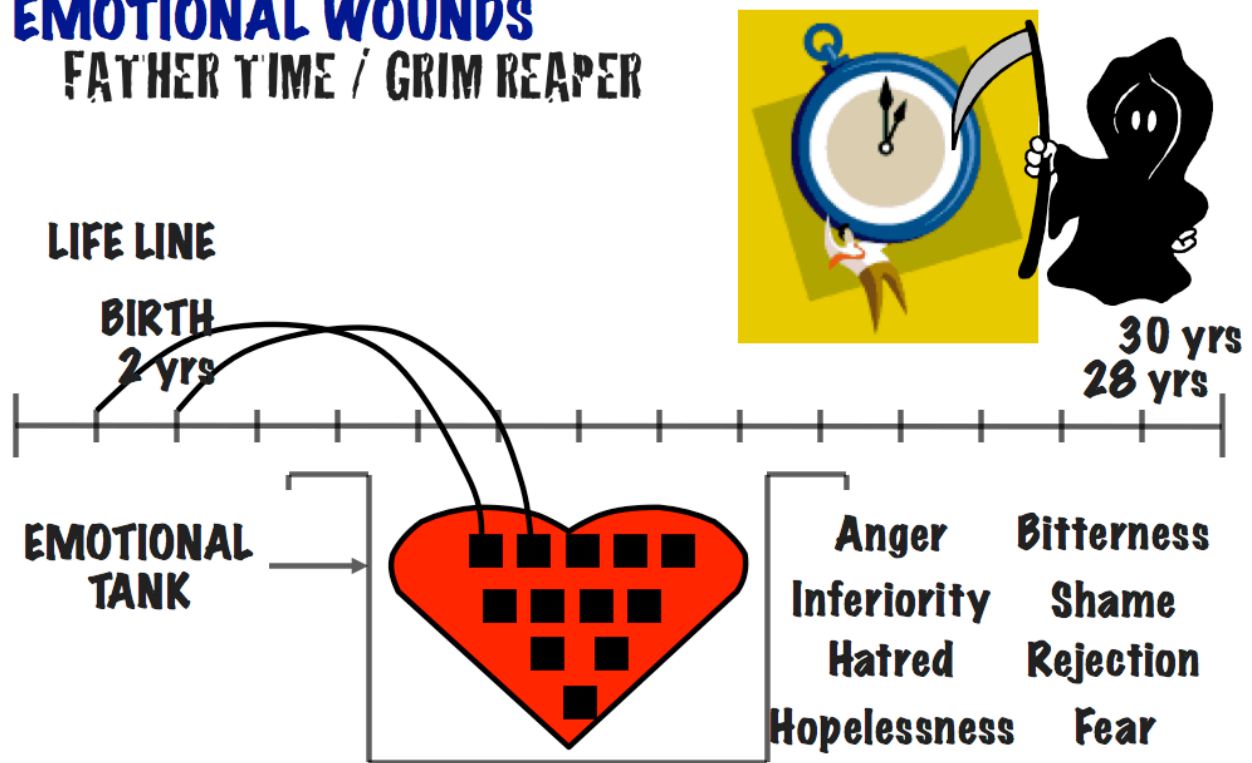
Understanding EMOTIONAL Pain and TIME CURSES

Our hearts can be described as “emotional tanks”. The emotional wounds/pain of childhood are like stones, that get dropped in our hearts, displacing joy/life. We know that there are significant stages in childhood and maturity:

- Birth
- Bar/Bat Mitzvah
- Thirty Years (Priestly Anointing)

Curses can be placed on certain time periods/days/cycles of our lives. “Father Time” (the Grim Reaper) operates within these time curses, to bring oppression and destruction.

EMOTIONAL WOUNDS FATHER TIME / GRIM REAPER



CLEANSING Time and Space

GOD commands us to be HOLY as He is Holy ... but what does this mean?

Let's look at what GOD set APART and called HOLY in Scripture ...

What GOD calls HOLY:

- 1) As we've seen, one of the FIRST things GOD calls HOLY is the Seventh Day — that is, TIME.
- 2) In the account of Moses and the BURNING BUSH, GOD tells Moses he is standing on holy GROUND — that is, LAND.
- 3) The TABERNACLE was set-apart as HOLY, including all the UTENSILS within its BOUNDARIES — that is, SPACE.
- 4) And we see MANKIND — the Office of PRIEST and High PRIEST — is also set-apart as HOLY.

We see TWO key areas that are set-apart and holy are TIME and LAND (space).

This principle applies to deliverance and ministry. If a person has sticky ATTACHMENTS to defiled TIME, or sticky ATTACHMENTS to defiled LAND ...

It will be DIFFICULT for them to walk in FULL healing and DELIVERANCE ... if their UN-Godly attachments to TIME and LAND are not cleansed — TRAUMA-bond attachments to TIME and LAND (space) will need to be DEALT WITH.

Time ISN'T neutral!!

TIME isn't neutral — it has these spikes during the year. We need to be aware of these spikes, in terms of CLEANSING time, because of the CURSES and DEFILEMENT that rides on these days/times/seasons.

An example of the correlation between suicide and an attempted abortion:

For example, a young mother has an unplanned pregnancy, and thinks about/plans aborting the child — she plans this for 23 May of that year. In the end, she decides to keep the child ... and he is born without any knowledge of the mother's thoughts of abortion.

However, thirty years later, that spirit of death takes the person out with suicide ... WHEN?! 23 May, thirty years later. The time was defiled and carried the curse of death that the mother had placed on it.

TIME Clocks Setup in the Spirit

Time clocks are ANNUAL problems — like SICKNESS, financial loss/problems, RELATIONAL difficulties, ETC. — that come OVER and OVER AGAIN in a person's life or family ...

Time clocks are PATTERNED:

- (1) Either the DATE is constant/ANNUAL (i.e. 20 May every year, or your BIRTH DATE).
- (2) Or the PERIOD of time is CYCLICAL (i.e. every 3 months).
- (3) Or it can be a TIME-SLOT (i.e., Sunday morning from 9-12 noon, the witches are targeting the churches).

These are CURSES on TIME!

We need to UNDERSTAND how the enemy works — the TIMES that are setup to bring DESTRUCTION in our lives are actually the TIMES that GOD has set up and INTENDED for BLESSING to flow into our LIVES!

You were not born “blank” or without purpose — you were born with a timeline that was planned and purposed by GOD. There are places along this timeline that GOD has designed for you to take a leap forward — above and beyond what you have contributed — above and beyond your faith and obedience in walking in His Principles ... these specific times were designed by GOD to be leverage points for you.

However, the enemy also knows our timelines and the leverage places in our lives — and so tries to do everything he can to change those times of intended blessings ... into CURSES.

Whenever we find curses on TIME, we need to cleanse it in order to receive the blessing that GOD intended.

GENERATIONAL Curses on Time

If you see a devouring pattern operating in your life, you need to ask if this is as a result of your own sin (doors you have opened) — or is it as a result of the sins of your forefathers?

It will be important to look back at your father's and mother's bloodline, and ask if there was any history where devastating things happened to them in a cyclical pattern. Examples include early death patterns, divorce, bankruptcy, rape/violent experiences, and so forth.

Practical Application:

1. Repenting of the sin and a cleansing of time needs to take place ...
2. Time clocks need to be broken with the Hammer of the Word. The cleansing needs to then be brought forward to the current time, to your covenant spouse (if you're married), as well as to your physical and spiritual seed, to a thousand generations.
3. Then you speak and release BLESSINGS over your life/family, into your current time.

A Change in lifestyle MUST be IMPLEMENTED:

Only praying the prayers of repentance/renunciation will NOT bring complete change, even if you pray them 100 times over!

NOTE!! For every sin there is a *virtue* — for every wrong behavior there is a *right behavior*.

You need to find out what your calling is from ABBA FATHER — this requires voluntarily embracing some kind of pain to be able to get the results that you need. If you are serious about receiving the blessing that is due you, and that the curses on time be reversed to blessings ... you need to work through the renunciation prayers (repentance) — get rid of the generational sins, and own your own sins and see how you came in agreement with the sins of your forefathers.

You will need to repent and deal with your own sins — however, you will then NEED to start living a lifestyle of acting in the opposite spirit. It could take quite some time to form a lifestyle of living according to GOD's Principles — maybe even fasting and prayer will be necessary to enforce this Godly lifestyle in your life!

But you will NEED to embrace this lifestyle ... embrace the pain that is necessary to pursue your calling — then you will be able to breakthrough to receive every kind of blessing GOD has designed for you to receive during specific seasons. It requires a lifestyle change of doing the works of righteousness that is the opposite of the iniquity.

ROUTINE Cleansing of Time:

We see examples in Scripture, of ROUTINE / DAILY cleansing of time — such as:

“Give us **TODAY** our DAILY bread ...”

“His Mercies and Loving-Kindness are new **every DAY** ...”

PRACTICAL Steps in Cleansing Time

When cleansing time, one needs to look at FOUR different areas:

1. Bloodline
2. Marriage Line
3. Adoptive Line
4. Covenant Line (any organization)

And ask GOD to cleanse the time of FIVE things:

1. Sin, rebellion and iniquity.
2. Rebellion.
3. Iniquity.
4. Trauma.
5. All un-Godly covenants.

Then we ask GOD to release all the BLESSINGS that He intended to flow to us at that time/day.

Some examples of how I can be out of God's timing for my life:

The following special days are commencement days of new seasons in your life:

- Conception – when Time Gates are opened and the Books are opened and your purpose and destiny is read over your life by an angel of the Lord.
- Birthdays
- Wedding Anniversaries
- C-section births, dates planned and set up by doctor for convenience as well as induction of birth of baby.
- Time clocks set up by the demonic kingdom for children to be born on certain high days to fulfill a demonic agenda set up by the sins of the forefathers.

It is very important to pray through the Gates of Time leading into these personal seasons that signal a new cycle of activities that are crucial to your well-being.

Prayer to realign with GOD's Times and Seasons

Father, we come boldly before Your Throne of Grace to present You with this prayer for freedom from all bondages with TIME. We dress ourselves in Your Armour according to Ephesians 6 and take up the weapons You have given us to fight against the enemy of our souls.

We now go in the spirit to the **gates of time** where all the clocks are kept which are keeping us bound to the demonic covenants made by our forefathers through all the generations.

In the Almighty Name of Y'shua, we now take authority over Chronos who is the gatekeeper and strongman over these clocks - we bind him and declare that he will release the time clocks that belong to our family line - we strip him of all authority and power that he has had over these clocks belonging to our family line.

We now unhook our family line from the Twelve Pillars of the Zodiac which are the Principalities that rule the second heavens - we declare that these twelve pillars will not have any more control over me or my family - past, present and future.

FATHER, on behalf of myself and my family line, I renounce and repent for rejecting Your Timing and taking timing into our own hands. I repent for all those who used devices as a method of un-Godly time control including **sundials, hourglasses, pendulums, stopwatches, charms, amulets, talismans, clothing or any other un-Godly device** - past, present and future.

On behalf of my family line, and myself, I renounce and repent for worshipping time instead of worshipping the GOD Most High Who holds time in His Hands.

FATHER, on behalf of myself and my generational line, I renounce and repent for all who attempted to **control, bend, or warp time** – for all who tried to control time for their own purposes and for all who attempted to **travel through time** to change and manipulate their own lives or the lives of others.

FATHER, please disconnect my family line from any **un-Godly time clocks**.

Please disconnect me from all un-Godly **magnetic fields of the land** that seek to control my body, soul and spirit clock, and please disconnect me from **any un-Godly time**.

Please remove any **un-Godly connection and rhythm to Greenwich**.

FATHER, please break any connection between **any un-Godly priest of time and me**.

Please break all spirit and soul ties between me and any false or **un-Godly fathers or mothers, grandfathers or grandmothers of time**.

FATHER, please break any connection between **any time lords and me**.

FATHER, I renounce and repent on behalf of myself and those in my generational line for any agreements that were made with the **grim reaper** who we believed came when it was time to die.

FATHER, please remove any connection between **un-Godly clock-faces and my physical and spiritual senses.**

Please break, shatter, cut off, and destroy the **connectors between un-Godly clock-faces and my eyes, ears, mouth, nose, and hands.**

Father, I bring before You **every indicator of time on a clock** - the date calendar, the numbers 1-12, the hour hand, the second hand, as well as every tick-tock of every milli-second. I ask You to please go back in time in my life (God is not bound by time - He is outside of time) - please apply Your Blood to every trauma and sin that has ever happened in the life of my family and my own life - cancel all legal rights of the enemy on my life to keep me in captivity with this prayer of repentance for not honouring You with our life on earth - the days of our life that You have ordained and purposed for us to live.

Father, please forgive us for using our time to glorify satan in whatever way - living our lives in our own way and not realising that life is a GIFT.

We ask forgiveness for not choosing life at all times - for speaking and thinking words of death and even having suicidal thoughts. We now choose LIFE - LACHAIM!

Please remove **un-Godly pendulums** so that I may be correctly balanced in Your Time.

FATHER please remove **un-Godly clock-faces** and replace them with Your Righteous Clock-Face.

Please cause the hands of the clock to move according to Your Time and bring my body, soul and spirit clock back into Your control and nobody else's.

Please establish the correct time, so that confusion, lack of self-awareness, and loss of time will not occur.

FATHER please stop the **deceleration of my body, soul and spirit clock** and restore me to Godly acceleration.

FATHER, I renounce and repent on behalf of myself and those in my generational line who spoke **word curses** to do with time against themselves and others.

FATHER, I repent for lies about time to myself and to others – I repent for believing or saying that we were “living on borrowed time”, “out of time”, or “walking on the sands of time”.

I repent of saying of myself and anyone else that our “time is” or “was running out”.

I declare the Truth that as a believer in Messiah my time is not up and will never be up.

FATHER please remove from above my head any **un-Godly hourglasses**.

Father, I bring before You any **time capsules** where my family or I have been trapped in - I bring before You the **locks and keys** that have been used by the enemy who is acting like a jail keeper over us - Father, we repent for giving the enemy legal right to lock us away in any time capsule!

Now we ask You to come and set us free from every **time capsule prison** - take the keys of the Kingdom and unlock us from every prison which is holding us captive to certain **times** and **events** and **places** in the spirit! Break open and destroy with Your Fire every lock and key that it will never again be able to be used against my family or myself.

I am seated in Heavenly places and will live for eternity.

I choose to believe that whoever believes in You shall not die but have eternal life. I declare my eternal timeline and nature in Messiah who lives forever and ever.

FATHER, please restore eternity to my heart and readjust it to beat with your Kairos Time. FATHER, please make Your Timing my timing and Your Seasons my seasons. FATHER, I ask that You give me a heart that is able to discern both time and judgment.

FATHER I declare the truth that You are the **Aleph** and **Tav** (Alpha and Omega). You are the One Who places eternity in the hearts of man. You are the Creator and Controller of time.

FATHER You are the One Who has written all the days of my life in Your Book. You knew them before even one came into being. You are the One Who has seen the beginning and the end, and I now choose to place my time into Your Hands. I choose now to believe and trust that Your Timing in my life is better than my timing.

FATHER, please apply Your Blood to the mechanisms, gears, and springs of my body, soul and spirit so that they will work as You have ordained and planned them to work. Please now anoint with **oil all the parts of my body, soul and spirit clock**. I choose now to step into Your Time for me and Your Excellent Glory.

FATHER please **replace all/any un-Godly clock parts** with **Godly clock parts** so that the body clock that You have given me will click and move, synchronized with You in glory from now onwards.

FATHER, please **unite my body, soul and spirit clock to You and the Body of Messiah**, so that we will be synchronized and not go ahead of one another or ahead of You.

Please bring us collectively into right time.

Father, we ask You to translate us from the kingdom of darkness and the Gates of Time (Greenwich) to the Kingdom of our Lord and Messiah – Yeshua HaMaschiach. We declare that He is the Ruler of all our times and seasons.

We now release God's judgment-clock against our enemies!

We also pray against the demons who will try to pick up the smashed clocks as well as the smashed glass pieces and the grains of sand that carried the curses – (they will try to put the clocks and hourglasses together again and re-establish the cycles again). We bind every demon assigned who will try to re-establish what has now been dismantled - we strip you of all power and authority and declare that the destruction is complete and everything is destroyed with God's Fire!

We tear the mantle of the **officiating high priests and priestesses of time** who were assigned in the spirit over our family line - they will not be able to EVER again stand at the **demonic altars and gates of time** and call out our family names to speak further curses over us - it is FINISHED!

I declare that all demonic seasons and times have now been broken - all drought and crop failures have been broken with showers of blessings!! We reverse every curse and change it into a blessing!!

I declare the JUBILEE YEAR of the Lord over our family and myself!

Restore me now fully to correct time with a **Righteous body, soul and spirit clock**.

We declare that everything we have prayed has now been sealed with the Blood of the Lamb!!

I ask all the above in the Almighty Name of Y'shua (Jesus)!

AMEN!

WHAT Makes Trauma "STICKY"?

What is it that makes any trauma still have an effect on you, even if it happened years ago?

For example — years ago, you had a bad incident with someone ... and still today, there is a reaction inside you when that person's name is mentioned — or you avoid them at all costs!

We tend to want to write things off as "just silly" or "it happened so long ago" ... BUT the fact that there is STILL a reaction/conflict inside you — *or you do not want to meet with this person again* — shows that you have a trauma bond to TIME.

You will need to look very closely at the disconnect between the memory and your reality. Your reality could be really great ... but your emotions are still stuck way back in the past.

Diagnostics:

1. A memory won't LEAVE — it doesn't age or fade away.
2. There is a huge DISCREPANCY between your positive reality and the emotions that you were feeling way back then.

These (above) are the two major markers for a trauma bond to time.

- When you feel an emotion that does NOT FIT with your identity — who you think you are,
- You feel FEAR — but it makes no sense now,
- You are walking in total victory in the current time — but you still have emotions that do NOT FIT with your current status ...

When this happens, you need to ask — ***when/where has this happened before when I felt this same emotion?***

So what makes any trauma “sticky”?!

It is when we sit in judgment towards GOD.

It is not what somebody ELSE did to me — its what I did to me. It's not what happened to me — it's my response to what happened to me.

It could be that you were falsely accused — they were wrong and you were right — but yet you still were persecuted ... and you expected GOD to vindicate you. When GOD did NOT vindicate you and you knew you were right ... you then judged Him.

There are three common responses to when GOD does NOT deliver what we EXPECT:

- (1) GOD does not take care of my reputation — so I will have to take care of this part of my life.
 - I have tremendous faith that GOD will take care of so many other things in my life — but in this area, I am in charge! I become god to myself in this area. I become god to myself and take responsibility for some piece of my life while still trusting GOD for all the other stuff in my life.
- (2) I do the same as what Eve did — I accept all of GOD's Rules — but in this case, I am going to have to break the rules ... I will have to violate the rules of GOD just in this one situation because He did not come through for me!
- (3) Enough of GOD — I am done with Him!

Deciding TO DECIDE.

Satan came to Eve and said: “GOD is NOT as good as He think He is”. She had to decide if she was going to weigh the evidence as to whether GOD was good or not. As soon as she *decided to decide*, she was already in deep trouble!! Deciding to decide is a very dangerous thing to do.

Job 13:15 “15 [I do it because, though He slay me, yet will I wait for and trust Him and] behold, He will slay me; I have no hope—nevertheless, I will maintain and argue my ways before Him and even to His Face.”

Job declared: “**I will NOT decide to decide!!**”

How do we apply this TRUTH?

Practical Application:

- ➡ FATHER, that really HURT! I don’t know how to go FORWARD TODAY with all this PAIN? Also, I DON’T understand WHY this has had to HAPPEN to me ... it makes NO SENSE to me ... and it REALLY REALLY HURTS.
- ➡ BUT! I am NOT going to DECIDE to DECIDE,
- ➡ EVEN THOUGH I am seriously HURTING — even though it looks REALLY REALLY BAD, I am DEFIANTLY proclaiming: “You are STILL good — You are STILL my GOD, AND I STILL TRUST YOU!!”
 - I believe that SOMEHOW You are SOME WHERE in all of this,
 - It looks to ME like YOU were ASLEEP on Your Throne today ...
 - But you are NOT, and I am NOT going to sit in JUDGMENT on You.

Satan got the first person to *decide to decide*, and from there it went downhill. Job said: “It HURTS, I don’t understand all of what is happening — but even if He KILLS me, **YET will I trust Him!!**”

THIS is your insurance against TRAUMA bonds to TIME!!

STEPS to Freedom from Trauma-Bonds.

1. Confess that you decided to decide — which is SIN. Confess that you decided to be god unto yourself.
2. Confess that you have slandered GOD in a very prideful, arrogant way — by saying that GOD was not paying attention to you by not vindicating you.
3. Celebrate GOD’s Wisdom.

What happened to you was wrong — but your perpetrators did not make it “sticky” — it was your judgments against GOD that made the trauma “sticky”.

Review:

- (1) Diagnoses — Look for emotions you should NOT have.
- (2) Look for a disconnect between your reality and your emotions.
- (3) Ask GOD where/when has this happened before?
- (4) The FOCUS is not so much on WHO did WHAT to you — your questions SHOULD BE:
 - *Did I DECIDE to DECIDE?*
 - *What did I DECIDE?*
 - *CAN I see GOD's WISDOM?*

Healing from the EFFECTS of TRAUMA¹⁷⁶

Trauma is a side-effect of experienced events that happen to us, which are beyond our control.

Now that the healing community is much more aware of the prevalence of trauma (particularly among soldiers that have returned home from wars), it is receiving much more attention.

Examples of possible traumatic experiences include the following:

- Roadside accident,
- Falling down stairs,
- Sexual abuse,
- Sudden delivery of regretful news,
- Death in the family,
- Divorce from a spouse,
- Divorce of parents,
- Discharge from work,
- Auto accident,
- Fire,
- Near death experience,
- Rape,
- Death of a child,
- Extreme humiliation,
- Unfair treatment,
- Fear of death,
- War,

¹⁷⁶ Revised and edited. Original notes taken from <http://www.healingofthespirit.org>

- Near drowning,
- Being robbed,
- Miscarriage,
- Health diagnosis,
- Parents fighting,
- Abandonment,
- Adoption,
- Abortion,
- Physical abuse.

Whenever people go through severe trauma, there is a danger that their extreme vulnerability (at that time) will provide an opening for the enemy to enter the person's spirit.

An example of this occurrence is when a mother is severely traumatized at watching her daughter die in the hospital after a car accident – the “spirit of death” can enter the mother.

The event, however, does not affect all persons the same way. For some individuals, this incident is considered and accepted as one of unalterable consequence, while to others it is a life-changing event.

God created us with a spirit, soul, and body. It is impossible for one part of our humanity to experience a traumatic event without the other parts also being affected.

Damage can be caused to the inner-self (spirit and soul-emotions) through injury or suffering which has occurred to the outer-self (body). While the medical profession's immediate concern is for treatment of our physical body, there typically is no concern over the effects on our spirits (as in extreme cases resulting in emotional instability, suicidal tendencies, and physical disabilities).

One of the ministries of Jesus as identified in Isaiah 61:1 was to “*bind up the brokenhearted*” (heal). “Brokenhearted” actually means “shattered into separate pieces”.

Not only can our body be broken, but our spirit may be “shattered” at the same time. A spirit of infirmity (which causes us to “think” we have a physical disability) can enter at the time of a traumatic event and is then locked up within.

We may “think” the resulting limitations are the physical result of the accident, when they really are a spirit of darkness that entered at the time of the trauma (which causes the body to give the appearance of a long-time physical injury). When the trauma (locked in the spirit) is identified, released, and healed, and the spirits of fear and infirmity are cast out, the physical symptoms often disappear immediately.

The results of these experiences usually include the spirit of death, the spirit of great fear, or the spirit of infirmity entering.

*This often results in nightmares, hurts, emotions, bad memories, or panic attacks called **Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD)**.*

When an injustice or a serious sin has been committed against a person, particularly against a child (such as sexual, physical, or verbal abuse), or when a life-threatening, frightening, or a highly unsafe experience or traumatic event occurs (such as in a divorce), the one offended remembers the panic, pain, violation, trauma, sense of disloyalty or abandonment, confusion, shame, and guilt, and later revisits the situation over and over again in his or her mind.

This recalling of a traumatic memory (or PTSD), scientists now believe may be even worse than the disabling physiological response suffered at the time of the initial event. It is believed this recalling of a traumatic memory or event reconsolidates the memory, writing it more strongly in the mind.

The effects of trauma and how to deal with it.

John 16:33 *"In the world you have **tribulation**: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world."*

Note Y'shua (Jesus) didn't say "will have" as though it were some time in the future, but you have it now.

The **GREEK** word for tribulation is "thlipsis" which means pressure (literally or figuratively):
- afflicted, (-tion), anguish, burdened, persecution, tribulation, trouble.

The **HEBREW** root word for tribulation is **TSA-RAR** (צָרָר Strong's H6887) and includes the following meanings:

"adversary, be in affliction, besiege, bind up, be in, bring distress, narrower ... a primitive root;

to cramp, literally or figuratively, transitive or intransitive (as follows) - adversary, (be in) afflict(-ion), besiege, bind (up), (be in, bring) distress, enemy, narrower, oppress, pangs, shut up, be in a strait (trouble), vex".

Let's look at the WORD-PIC ...

TSA-RAR (צָרָר) is spelt:

- TSADIK = Catch, desire, need.
- REYSH = A person, the head, the highest.
- REYSH = A person, the head, the highest.

The LETTER-PIC reveals – *"We go through TRIBULATIONS in order to catch the desire of or to know and experience the KING of kings".*

Note that the verse clearly states that we *all* have it ... not *might* have, not *will* have it (as though we are not having it now), nor does it imply potential. But EVERYBODY experiences it one way or another.

Traumatic experiences shake the foundations of our beliefs about safety, and shatter our assumptions of trust.

Invariably, we find that sufferers of some physical and/or emotional difficulty have experienced significant emotional and/or physical trauma at some point in their lives, which has detrimentally affected their ability to recover from the normal, but difficult circumstances of life, and remain stable.

Removing the physical affects of trauma can greatly help an individual achieve or regain the capacity to heal and grow in many areas. It can also eliminate the daily torment of the long-term affects of trauma, both emotionally and physically.

In the healing process, the crucial issue is building enough capacity to stay relationally connected to God over a sufficient amount of time, for us to allow the process to be completed.

Unfortunately, trauma affects us on many levels: emotional, spiritual, and physical.

Medically, the understanding and treatment of the affects of trauma has been limited primarily to the emotional. And medication seems to have been relegated to insulation from the pain.

Traditional medicine seems to recognize that our bodies have many little understood capabilities and one of them is the retention of the memory of trauma at a cellular level, but treatment has not been affective in reversing its effects.

Trauma itself is a specific scheme of the enemy to gain access to us for purposes of future torment and emotional torture. One of the understandings of the darkness that overtook the scene that day Y'shua (Jesus) was on the cross – is that it wasn't a storm, or the aftermath of the earthquake ... but instead, it was every demon in hell coming to take its last best shot at Jesus – it was intentional torment and torture. It is little wonder that His death took comparatively so little time on the cross.

Consequently, Jesus' death on the cross was complete atonement in that He took upon Himself all the trauma, torture, and torment intended for you and me.

We do not have to suffer that again.

The principle behind this scheme of the enemy is to cause trauma before the cross became affective in the life of an individual for one of two purposes:

1. Make it difficult for a person to enter into their full identity;
2. For the purpose of causing future torment.

The only way that "before the cross became affective" is remotely possible is to remove some portion of the individual to another dimension, time or place, and hold it captive there.

Ministry to numerous SRA victims showed that portions of their identity/being can be stuck/captured/imprisoned/delayed in other dimensions, times or spaces through intentionally enforced trauma. This confirms that a trauma victim's identity can be messed with by intentionally introducing, or taking advantage of, events that effectively delay development.

You and I live in a multi-dimensional world, but are generally only cognizant of four of them; height, width, depth, and time. But theoretical scientists working with String and Superstring theory tell us that there are at least 11, and there may be as many as 23, dimensions.

You have to remember that you and I are made in the Image of God (Genesis 1:27), and God is light (1 John 1:5 and John 1:1-9) and you are a child of the Light (Luke 16:8).

Scientists tell us that if each organ is broken down to the lowest common denominator, it will all be a similar type of cell – the same DNA as the whole person, but encoded such that it will perform well within the context of that organ.

If we break that cell down further, we find a number of atoms. Each atom can be further reduced to its component parts: neutron, proton(s) and electron(s). These elements vibrate at a specific frequency, which is in accord with the individual's DNA.

Scientists further tell us that if each individual's DNA strand is un-twisted it can be played as a melody on a piano (think of this in terms of more vibrations).

When the enemy messes with us through our own sinful activity or cursed generational (family) issues, our DNA can be altered by attaching junk to the strand (the science of epigenetics), or through trauma.

Our “song” can be changed from a major key to a minor one, simply by slightly altering our frequency. Although our DNA can't be changed – our DNA is passed on to our children, and things riding on it can have a profound affect in even a single generation.

What is one way this can be done? By removing one small part of us to another domain or dimension.

So how do we set things back in order?

First, by applying the principles of Messiah Y'shua's (Jesus Christ's) Atonement to the issues of the affects and the residue of trauma in the life of a trauma victim.

Y'shua's (Jesus') substitutionary death in our behalf says we do not have to suffer the subsequent torment that trauma victims usually report.

MINISTRY to traumatized victims.

NOTE: Every cell in the body has memory. The body holds on to the memory of the trauma and this needs to be released in the Name of Y'shua (Jesus).

1. Determine the Traumatic Events

Through specific questions (an interview), determine the traumatic events for the client from childhood into adulthood: physical, emotional, spiritual, and/or sexual.

Include such things as divorce/deaths/loss of a key loved one, childhood accidents and injuries, rape, abuse, surgeries, frequent moves, moves at etc. key times, major rejections, abandonment, car accidents, major illnesses, broken bones, surgeries and invasive medical procedures, attempted suicide, near death experiences, etc. – anything that potentially had a major negative (traumatic) affect on them. Make a list if you need to.

2. Take Authority Over All Body Memories

First of all, tell your client what you are about to do and get their permission to do it. If they will not give you permission to take authority over their being/body for a few minutes, to cut some things off – you do not have the authority to continue.

If your client agrees, in the Name of Messiah Y'shua (Jesus Christ), take authority over their body (we often use the term “being”, which tends to be more inclusive) and command out of it:

- All of the affects of everything that made it on the list, down to the cellular level;
- All memories of any incident on any level, the results of all trauma;
- Fright, terror, chemicals (drugs, poisons, or toxins) the body has either produced naturally – or that were ingested/injected – and has hung on to as a result of trauma, excess enzymes produced, anesthesia and anesthetics, etc. – produced prior to, during, and after the incident.
 - This would include fear induced during and following significant medical procedures and surgery(s).

****IMPORTANT!!**** Require that it come out without harm or injury.

Bless the client's lymphatic system and other systems, to safely remove all wastes, toxins, poisons, or any other product or by-product of trauma from the body. Include anything that is naturally a foreign agent in the body, that were bonded to – or that the body produced in excess – connected with the traumatic event.

3. Take Authority Over All The Effects Of Trauma

Take authority over their body and command out of it all of the long and short-term effects of trauma, injuries, stress, tension, worry, anxiety, fear, wounding, etc..

Be certain to include the memories of all abuse, defiling touch, incisions, invasive medical procedures, rejection, abandonment, beatings/bruises, harsh words or curses spoken by parents or other significant authorities, etc..

Take note!! Even intercession can induce secondary trauma to a person through attempting to help carry the burdens of others.

In the event of particularly defiling activity – such as rape or initial homosexual encounters – command out of their body the memory of all smells, feelings, tastes, sounds, vibrations, and touch connected with those events.

Do not hurry through this part. You will find that your client may feel things leaving them as they get progressively more relaxed.

Some clients can actually fall asleep toward the conclusion of this section and many more could be unable to walk immediately afterward because they are so relaxed.

4. *Disconnect From the Second Heaven*

This is important. Ask the Lord to disconnect them from any and all second heaven entities: fallen angels, principalities, powers, dominions, thrones, rulers, nephilim, etc. – that have gained access to them through the traumatic events they suffered, for the purpose of future torment.

Ask the Lord to shut down all pathways, portals, and means of access to them for communication or influence.

5. *Take Authority Over Every Means of Access*

Take authority over all open **pathways, portals, gateways, dimensional doorways, patios, porches, balconies or windows**, and every means of access, marks or markers, or any means of connectivity, placed upon the client physically or spiritually, to track them or gain access (recorders, cameras, and so forth), for purposes of torment. Shut them down in the authority given to you in the Name of Y'shua (Jesus). Cancel all assignments of familiar spirits made against them as a result of traumatic incidents.

If your client has been frequently tormented by violent or sexually oriented dreams, this will usually stop them. But if you are uncertain, or just want to cover the ground, ask the Lord to issue a "cease and desist order". If they have had violent or **tormenting dreams** ask them if there is a theme or pattern to what happens to them in the dreams. Sometimes this will give you a clue as to other issues you need to deal with in a subsequent ministry session.

6. *Release Any Portion of Their Being*

Ask the Lord that if there is any portion of their being that has been delayed, trapped, captured or imprisoned in another time, another space, dimension or place, as a result of trauma – that HE would please cause it to be released and rejoined with their core being in this current time, space, and dimension.

Ask the Lord to re-unify those portions with the core person.

If prompted by the Holy Spirit, walk them through a reunification of these fractured parts by walking them through each dimension or through each year of their lives.

*Isaiah 61:1-2, "The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the **captives**, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; 2 To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn;"*

(Remember that prisoners are there because of something they have done. Captives are imprisoned through no fault of their own.)

Under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, walk them slowly forward from the period of conception to birth – as well as when their birth mother may have experienced trauma herself, or planned to abort the child.

Then pray through the age of one, two or three years – year by year – until you reach their current chronological age, pausing when prompted between years, to allow the Holy Spirit to re-integrate them.

Also ask the Holy Spirit to mature each re-integrated portion to the client's current age. This doesn't seem to take any more time, but it is worth the effort.

It is always proper to coach your adult client to be aware of his/her body, and report to you the changes they sense or feel, as you are walking them through each year of the process. Don't get in a hurry.

7. *Re-Establish the Connection Between the Hemispheres of the Brain*

Pray that the Lord will re-establish the connection between the two hemispheres of the brain. Often heavily traumatized clients live predominately out of the left hemisphere of their brain and need the right side to be stimulated.

Pray that the Lord will re-establish and synchronize both explicit memory and implicit memories, and re-activate any connections required to retrieve memories needed for complete healing.

If prompted (and you have asked permission from the client), you can place your hands specifically in the area near the amygdala and then the hippocampus, and ask the Lord to restore them, repair them, or enhance them so that their healing can progress rapidly.

8. *Appropriate Sleep Patterns*

Ask the Lord to re-establish for them the appropriate **sleep patterns** the Lord designed for them, and to establish for them a sweet undisturbed, rejuvenating, regenerative rest.

Proverbs 3:24 *"If you lie down, you will not be afraid; when you lie down, your sleep will be sweet."*

This is a very well-known Scripture that we quote when suffering from sleeplessness, but we need to read the verse in context – which refer to those who are walking in GOD's Ways and keeping His Commandments.

Ask the Lord to begin or re-establish Godly dreams, visions, and angelic visitations in the night seasons – both to enlighten, and instruct and direct them.

Close the spiritual gates of ivory and horn – these are the gates that the enemy uses to enter with demonic dreams and visions.

9. *Dismantle All Automatic Human Responses*

Ask the Lord to begin to **dismantle all automatic human responses** gained as a result of trauma; i.e., abnormal fright responses, triggers, fears and phobias, etc..

Pray over their brain for the Lord to rebuild, re-establish, and re-create any electrical or chemical connections broken or improperly re-connected, as a result of trauma ... so that the individual can operate once again within normal limits of high and low stimulus, and can remain in control emotionally (respond maturely) when the stimulus exceeds those limits.

10. *Instruction To His/Her Human Spirit*

Then instruct the client to instruct his/her human spirit each evening before going to sleep to turn his/her face to the Father during the night, while the body and soul are sleeping, and receive everything he/she needs for the coming day.

***Psalms 16:7** "I will bless the Lord, Who has given me counsel; yes, my heart instructs me in the night seasons."*

Foundational Studies

The understanding above very much builds on from our **J2F8** and **J2W** materials. In order to properly apply these aspects of advanced training, we do assume you have worked through J2F and J2W – the manuals of which contain specific prayers for the brain, sleep, trauma in childhood, etc..

Having worked through J2F and J2W will also mean you have the foundational understanding of how the brain/memory works, how the brain develops during childhood, and how trauma affects the brain, causing arrested development.

We want to again strongly emphasize the importance of having worked through these materials – including the DVD's, which have so much more explanation and teaching, than the manuals (which are really just the notes/prayers).

Priestly Blessing

Numbers 6:24-27

“Y’varekh’kha YHVVH v’yishmerekha.

May YHVVH bless you and keep you.

Ya’er YHVVH panav eleikha vichunekka.

May YHVVH make His Face shine on you and show you His favour.

Yissa YHVVH panav eleikha v’yasem l’kha shalom.

May YHVVH lift up His Face toward you and give you peace.

Numbers 6:27 *“In this way they are to put **My Name** on the people of Isra’el, so that I will **Bless** them.”*

